



For daily latest book please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

BROKEN

Written by: Precious Moloi

Introduction:

These days how many of us marry our high school sweethearts? How many of us have long relationships with the ones that make our hearts dance? Today the essence of relationships is lost, why commit yourself to someone knowing very well that tomorrow you would wanna have fun with someone else? Why play with another child's heart?. I tend to believe the monks at times when they say "we only love with our minds and not our hearts" how can you say you love someone but at the end of the day hurt them? Today you proclaiming love for this person but when you guys break up, next week you likely to have moved on with someone else. Where does love fit in there?

The only true love we witness these days is how we love our parents, our siblings, our children, and our Families as a whole.. I am one of the girls who has been blessed to experience true and unconditional love, i started dating Sandile when I was 15 years old and today i am 25. Our relationship was witnessed by our loved

ones, our relationship was witnessed by our whole community. Even Today Mom doesn't still believe that Sandile and I have been together for soo many years.

Not all those glitters were gold though, Sandile came from a very dysfunctional and abusive home. His father was an alcoholic who used to abuse his mother and his sister, he would fall avictim of his abuse too at times. It was a painfultime for him back then, witnessing your Mother

being chased around the hood at night by your drunk Father with an Axe, it was more devastating knowing that the community has given up on his family. At first everyone wanted to extend a helping hand but Sandile's Mother kept on going back to her Husband no matter what and everyone just gave up on them that she became a laughing stock. In every corner women gossiped about her and laughed when she was not looking that "How stupid can she be, that man will never change". It wasn't a nice thing to witness. How Sandile and I fell for each other was that, My Mother despite what the community was saying she opened our home every weekend for Sandile, His mother, and his Sister when his Father was at it. My Mother didn't judge, My mother didn't ask questions but she accommodated them. At some point I used to ask My mother why she's opening our Home to the Khumalo family when clearly MaKhumalo didn't want our help, because the very next day

she would go back to her abusive cheating husband? My mom would say "If you cannot help another person then don't judge them, you will never understand what they are going through or why they keep on making the same decision until you have walked in their shoes" She would go on further to say "If you were Sandile's Mother you probably would've done something about it, good for you but she has her own reasons why she's staying in her abusive marriage we are different and we handle situations differently" I won't lie I saw Sandile's mother as a fool, this man hits you, this man cheats with women at the Tavern. This man exhausts all his money on alcohol and on the women that he is cheating with, how more of a fool can she be?

Things got really out of hand at one point, Sandile was too much affected by what was happening at home and he suffered a severe mental breakdown that he was in and out of hospitals a lot. When he wasn't admitted in a

psych ward he abused drugs it was a very difficult time that he would be missing for weeks and no one would know where he was, i almost gave up on him because there just wasn't any getting through to him. When all seemed impossible, Sandile worked hard at school and passed his matric very well that he got a bursary from some private company to go study diesel mechanic. He pushed through at tertiary until he finished and that's when his Mother finally had Mr Khumalo arrested and things started getting better for his family.

I thought i had the most perfect life, i had a learnership from some mine, my relationship was perfect Sandile and i we were very much in love. He saved up for Lobola, i had the most loving Mother in law in the world what more could i ask for? I was the only child born to my parents my father unfortunately passed on when i was 4 leaving my Mother to raise me but we weren't suffering because my Mother was a teacher, it has always been me and my mother...

.

My story is meant to show you that there's nothing called a perfect life or a perfect relationship, what i thought was perfect really wasn't.

My story is one of a kind.

I AM LANG'ELIHLE CELE LET MY STORY SURPRISE YOU.

[09/27, 21:41] Ron: BROKEN PART 1

LIHLE

I was standing outside next to the kitchen door which was wide open, i was looking at my drunk Uncle wasting that bottle of expensive whiskey by pouring it down on the ground talking about "Mchana mele kuqale kuphuze abaphantsi" meaning that Ancestors have to drink first. I laughed as he danced around and sang his

heart out with his old mine boots that were dirty, i don't even wanna mention his blue overall that was torn...

Him- "ulale ulale ulale, sizihlobo nathi la ekhaya"(are you listening, because we also relatives in this house)

If my Aunt his wife can come out of the house and see him this much drunk, she will flip and start yelling..

It was a Friday just after 16:00, everyone was upon their feet helping with the preparations for the Lobola negotiations tomorrow morning, my Mother went all out to call every relative she was that proud of me. Only the closest to us came you know how relatives are, not all of them will be happy for you. I was wearing a red&white specially made traditional dress for me which went with a matching doek, i also had a mini blanket around my shoulders.

I put my hand on my tummy i am 3 months pregnant but Sandile doesn't know, i haven't told him yet. Only my Mother, My sister, his Mother, and my friends know about the pregnancy i just wanna surprise him with the news. I love Sandile with all my heart we have been through a lot this past 10 years but nevertheless our relationship survived. Girls around here used to laugh at me, Sandile has always been an eye candy but because he was struggling financially back then no girl saw him as worthy of dating. Just to tell you a bit about my hood; i come from a place where a bottle of beer means a lot to girls than education, Jealousy runs deeper than the water pipes underneath. If you not dating what controls 4 wheels, you don't qualify to be in their circle of friendship after all how are you going to buy drinks when the weekend comes?

I have always been the odd one out now when i say that don't think i used to be locked up inside the house no that wasn't the case. I chose the

friends i used to roll with, weekdays we studying then weekend we go out and make sure that we come to my house later on and sleep. My Mother is not one of those Mothers who would strangle you to death for going out no, she trusted me and trusted that I would drink responsibly. She always said “Lihle you can go out on weekends all you want but please always come back home, i don’t care if you wake me up at 03:00am all i want is for you to come back home”. She is my world and I don’t know what i would do without her...

Around here i only have 2 friends, Fikile and Nomisa. Fikile is a cop and Nomisa works at Pick n Pay, she’s a Baker. Unfortunately for me iam currently not doing anything with my life, my learnership ended a few months ago and i was one of the few who weren’t made permanent.

Now i am planning on focusing on my pregnancy then next year i can look for a job or just go to college and do a short course..

Nomisa came out from the house. Nomisa- Hlehle let’s go get the scones

Me- Mara why are you guys going all out? It’s just Lobola negotiations

Nomisa- ungazohlanya! (don’t be crazy) you and Ndile are not getting married anytime soon so allow us to go crazy please not every girl around here is blessed like you

I forgot Nomisa is the craziest in our group..Nomisa- Let’s go

Me- did you tell Mom?

My Mother treats Nomisa and Fikile as if like they her own children, she sees them more than just friends to me but sisters. We grew up together so they have always been the siblings that i never had..

Nomisa- she knows

She held my hand and we walked to the gate..

Me- Yazi nje this mini blanket is annoying me

Nomsa- Haibo Sisi phela labafana bala es'godini mele bazi ukuthi usuthathiwe (all these boys from around here must know that you are taken)

Me- Is Fikile still at work? Nomsa- Yes she will come later
Me: okay

We walked down the street peacefully to her house to get the scones until i saw my enemy ifi could call her that.

Buhle used to give me a headache back when Sandile was in tertiary that's when a few girls wanted a piece of him and he cheated on me with Buhle....

She was standing at the gate of her house busy chit-chatting with her friends. Buhle has a beautiful body, she's pretty and she's lighter than me so boys do throw themselves at her feet. Just to think that Sandile and i almost broke up because of her makes my stomach twirl. I don't do well with confrontations, arguments, or petty fights so i never confronted her i just let her be.

Nomsa- u sharp?

I nodded while I looked at Buhle..Me- I'm fine

I put my hand on my tummy and stopped..Nomsa- what's wrong?

Me- I just felt a sharp pain Nomsa- sharp pain?

Me- Yes i have been feeling it a lot today Nomsa- How sharp is it?

Me- not that sharp

Nomsa- Are you sure we shouldn't go back home mara?

Me- No i am fine

She held my hand again and we continued walking, Buhle looked at me as we were passing..

I don't know what she was saying to her friend but we heard them laughing very loud as we passed them and throwing comments like "shame yena maan"

Nomsa stopped.. Me- Let's go Nomsa

Nomsa- It seems like there's something that they wanna say so why not say it right in our faces?

Me- Let's just go please i don't wanna fight

Plus I heard Buhle kicks ass with those wide curves of hers...

They continued throwing comments..

Buhle- I mean uNdile was mine i used to even

visit him njengoba bekases'kolweni (i used to visit him at school) mara he was renting a flat you know private colleges they don't have iRes

She said that out loud making sure that i hear her and it hit me hard, him cheating on me with Buhle still hits hard even though it was a long time ago...

I started breathing in and out as i put my hand again on my tummy, the pain was getting a bit stronger.

.

. NDILE

I was holding the stress ball and squeezing it tight as silence engulfed the room, i was laying on the leather chair while facing up and staring at the ceiling as i dated back to when it first happened.

Me- She was standing at the sink and washing

dishes i was sitting at the table helping my sister with her

homework. She would turn every now and then to look at us and smile, her smile was the only thing that used to brighten my day

I paused..

Dr Shai- What happened next?

I closed my eyes and let the scene play out in my mind, the punches he kept on throwing at her. Her painful scream that made

my ears bleed, in the mist of her enduring such brutal beating her eyes full of tears landed on us under the kitchen table. My Sister who was just 5 at that time was overwhelmed by unexplainable fear, she literally pissed on herself that's how scared she was. My Mother looked at us and yelled "Run, run to your room and lock the door". I remember taking my Sister and we ran, we ran to our room and locked ourselves there until my Mother stopped crying and screaming. When it was very quiet, i opened the door and slowly made my way to the kitchen passing my drunk father passed out on the couch in the lounge. What was on my mind was to get to my Mother, on the kitchen floor there was a lot of blood and she was laying there not moving. Her face had a lot of blood..

I felt a hand touching me on my shoulder, i grabbed it tightly while twisting it i then heard Dr Shai screaming a little. I opened my eyes and I was holding her hand and twisting it..

Her- It's just me I let go of it..

She started flexing it

Me- you said therapy is going to help! you said talking about it is going to help!

Her- Mr Khumalo it has only been 10 sessions and you only started opening up today

Me- The shooting range was better

Her- You almost shot your instructor remember?

Me- I don't think anything can help

Her- Your psychiatrist suggested therapy and that you take your medication have you been taking your meds?

Me- Both of them are not working! Both of you need to bring your heads together and fucken come up with a solution

She exhaled..

Me- You don't understand Doc you don't understand how deep this is

Her- And i am here to help you look Sandile with therapy and you taking your medication you should be fine

Should be fine? I don't think I'll ever be fine. The damage has been done.

[09/27, 21:48] Ron: ¥02LIHLE

It was late at night at around 20:00 and I was sitting outside next to the fire that my Uncle did for us, i was with Nomsa and Fikile. They were drinking alcohol and i was drinking rooibos tea. It was a slow and chilly night good thing i had the mini blanket over my shoulders which extended a bit to my arms keeping me warm.

Nomsa and Fikile were going on and on talking about crazy things as always and i was fully concentrated on the cramps that I was having, they were coming a bit harder now and they were similar to period pains. I know that i am not supposed to drink any meds but i couldn't help it a few minutes ago I drank two grandpasachets just to ease the cramps..

Fikile- Hlehle are you sure that we shouldn't go inside? I mean it's a bit cold now

She said that while her lips came in contact with the dumpie of flying fish.

Me- No i am fine, plus we have the fire keeping us warm

I took my phone out from the pocket of the traditional dress that i was wearing to check it and i haven't got any missed calls or anything from Sandile which was a bit worrying. His fling with Buhle ended a long time ago but even today i still have trust issues, i know that lately he hasn't given me a reason as to not trust him but I just get that small fear. I saw my Aunt coming out of the house with a tray and made her way to us...

Aunt- Mantombaza (girls) Fikile- Something smells good

Aunt- That would be the tripe that i have prepared

Fikile took the plates from the tray and gave us.. Nomsa- Hlehle is this kind of meal good for you? Me- what do you mean?

Aunt- usho njengoba uzithwele so (she means because you pregnant)

I looked at my Aunt..Me- You know?

Aunt- Kanti mele ngingazi? (i am not supposed to know)

I put my plate away and stood up.Me- Excuse me

Aunt- Haibo wena Lihle ukwatele nje ukuthi ngitshelilwe ngokuzithwala kwakho? (Lihle you are mad because i was told that you pregnant)

I went inside the house and then went to my bedroom, i closed the door and leaned against

it and closed my eyes while breathing in and out.I put my hand on my tummy the cramps were becoming unbearable and i felt a bit wet. I put my hand underneath my dress and my underwear was wet, i brought my hand back i was bleeding..I once heard that sometimes it's normal to be on your periods while you pregnant.

I moved and went to my wardrobe to get a clean underwear and a sanitary pad, i also took out my leggings so that i can wear underneath..

.

. NDILE

Yaya was on top of me going up and down while moaning, she was squeezing her breasts and biting her lower lip while facing up. I know you find everything wrong with this picture and i know that you feel the right to be judgemental but, this is how I release everything. All that is inside of me buried and slowly turning me into a beast i can release it on Yaya and she takes it.

She knows her place, it's just sex and money nothing more. Yaya is studying at UJ and she couldn't get a bursary or even a study loan because her mother is unemployed, i met her at a club this other time and we hit it off. She has been satisfying my sexual needs since Lihle is

not around. How i have sex with Lihle is way different from how i have sex with Yaya, Lihle is my heart our sex life goes with love. I make sure that she absorbs my love for her through intimacy and with Yaya she allows me to do anything to her after all i am paying her fees, rent, and give her an allowance. She only comes to my house once in a while, mostly we have sex in her place but sometimes it's difficult because of her roommate.

I was close to shooting my load up as she pumped hard, i place my hand on her neck and strangled her as i tensed up..

Me- Fuuuuuuck!!!

She went up and down more faster, i moved my hand from her neck to her waist i put my other hand and squeezed her tight. I then helped her to pump more faster..

Yaya- Ndile!!.. Ndile...

I pressed her against me as i released my load...

Me- Shiiiiiiiiiiiiit!!! Yaya- Ahhh!!!!

There was a moment of silence after that, i let go of her as we tried catching our breaths she was still on top of me..

Me- Get off me

She got off me and i took off the condom. Her- That was intense

Me- Get dressed i will drive you to your flat

Her- Come on i thought i was going to spend the night here

Me- It's bad enough that I am fucking you in my wife's bed

I got up and went to flush down the condom after rolling it with a toilet paper..

Yaya- Wifey is only moving on Sunday so why can't we have fun?

Me- ungang'hlan'isi please (don't make me mad please)

I put on my boxers and went to get a cigarette.. Yaya- Fine

She got up and started dressing i noticed the marks on her back.

Me- Looks like you healing quite good

Yaya- I am strong that buckle of your belt couldn't break me

I know that I am evil, i do all of these things to Yaya so that i don't hurt my wife. She takes all the rough sex, beatings, insults just

because she needs my money to finish her course and get a job. It's pretty hard on her because her family is looking at her to get them out of poverty, she comes from a poverty stricken background. She lives with her Mother, Grandmother, Sister, and her sister's kids. The allowance I give her she takes half of it and send them home so that they can buy food since her Grandmother's pension money from the government doesn't meet all family's needs..

Yaya- Uhm Ndile? Me- what?

Yaya- Can I work part time at your restaurant on weekends?

Being a diesel mechanic doesn't fully cover all my expenses so I own a restaurant and a club that make me money too. My restaurant is not fancy but the food sold there is mostly traditional dishes so it's always busy.

Me- I give you an allowance every month

Yaya- Kodwa ayineli njena (but it's not enough) Me- I'll think about it

Yaya- thank you

I took my phone and walked out of the room to call Lihle..

[09/27, 21:48] Ron: ¥03

LIHLE

I couldn't go outside anymore so I got in bed under the blankets to keep myself warm, the cramps were a bit better now they would just come hard for 2min then they would subside. In my whole puberty life I have never experienced such intense pains which made me to think that maybe it's something that comes with pregnancy. I have a high tolerance for pain, I could push through till tomorrow morning then after the negotiations if they still there I will ask my Mother to take me to the Doctor. I have been waiting for long for my ceremony tomorrow I am not going to have it ruined by cramps..

My phone vibrated, it was Sandile.. Me- Ndile

Ndile- Hlehle

Me- took you long to call

Ndile- I know Nana eish i had a hectic day. Iknocked off late then i went to therapy

Me- How is therapy going?

Ndile- to be honest nje maKhumalo i am not afeeling it

Me- kodwa it's only been a month since you started and you only have your sessions three times a week bekezela sthandwa sam' you will get used to them (hold on my love you will getused to them)

Ndile- ngoba seng'cela nguwe ke ngizobekezela(i will hold on just because you asked)

Me- other than therapy and work how was therest of your day?

Ndile- It was the same as usual i got home andwatched soccer

Me- I miss you soo much

Ndile- One day to go Nana then you can finallymove in permanently

Me- I cannot wait

Ndile- wena how was your day?

I closed my eyes as the cramps started again..Ndile- Hlehle?

I started breathing in and out slowly..Ndile- Nana are you still there?

Me- Yes i am still here sorry about thatNdile- kwenzakalani are you okay?

Me- ngi right sthandwa sam' (i am fine my love)

Ndile- I have to go get some rest i will see you tomorrow after the negotiations

Me- okay love

Ndile- Ngiyak'thanda maKhumalo (i love youmaKhumalo)

Me- nami Ngiyak'thanda Khumalo (i love youtoo)

Ndile- Lala ke (you can sleep now)

Me- I am not a baby NdileNdile- But you are my baby

I heard a knock at the door..

Me- someone is at the door please call me inthe morning i really miss you

Ndile- kodwa uyatefa Hlehle (you are a cry babyHlehle)

Me- I just wanna hear your voice that's allNdile- I will call you then I heard the knock again..Me- I have to go Ndile

Ndile- okay just remember one thing..Me- what is that?

Ndile- whatever happens just know that i loveyou, we come very far together 10 years Hlehle

Me- I know love

Ndile- you can hang up now

The door opened Karabo walked in..Me- Guess who just walked in?

Ndile- Who?Me- Karabo

Ndile- sekahamba ebusuku manje uKarabo?(karabo walks at night now)

Me- Kahle Khumalo i think she came withuMam'khumalo

Ndile- let me talk to herI looked at Karabo...

Me- Your brother wants to talk to you

Karabo is Ndile's little sister, Ndile is overprotective when it comes to her you can touch him with anything just not his baby sister.

Karabo- Why did you tell him that i am here?I shrugged my shoulders..

She took the phone and walked out, finally i can let out a soft cry..Me- Ahhhh...

I put both my hands in my tummy..

Me- Kanti yini manje bhabha? (what's wrong)why you causing mommy soo much pain?

I don't know why my baby would decide to putme in pain now..

.

. YAYA

Sandile walked back into the bedroom at least iwas done dressing up now.

Him- let me wear something then ill drive youMe- Okay

I sat down on the bed. He has been focusing onthe scars that were on my back ignoring the bigbruise on my left thigh, it's a consequence of the incident we had two days ago. Someone

would ask "Why do you put up with him" or why do this to myself but no one will understand. I have lived in poverty most of my life, that two room back at home shelters more than 5 people.

Sometimes we would go to bed without anything to eat because my mother would've taken all my Grandmother's pension money to go and drink it in the tavern. On the other hand my Sister is giving birth non-stop. I am just 23 years of age but i have been through a lot, and I have seen a lot. My Mother would constantly say "Yaya you have a vagina use it, we cannot suffer while you around" when your own Mother says that to you it tells how she feels about you she sees your womanhood as a way to make money. I was even lucky to pass matric and go to varsity, i am doing my second year in social work just two more years then ill have my qualification. Do i enjoy being treated like this by Sandile? No I don't but his abuse is just a small price to pay for what he is doing for me. I look this good because of him, i can do my hair, i have toiletries, clothes because of him. I am slaying most of the girls at school because of him, i have an expensive phone, a laptop and everything because of him. He is better than most of the male students who hit on me knowing very well that they cannot afford me..

He came back. Him- let's go

I stood up and took my bag..

Him- Tomorrow morning you must come to change the sheets i don't want any problems with my wife. Make sure that there's nothing of yours around

Me- I will do that

Sandile is a dog yes, he is evil, he is all what you paint him to be but the way he loves Lihle i envy that...

Before we could exit, he pushed me against the

wall and squeezed my cheeks very hard...

Him- Remember i am hurting you so that i don't hurt her

I know that very well he doesn't have to remind me...

Him- don't catch feelings this is not a relationship and do not even think of calling me, texting me, or even coming here when Lihle is around

I nodded.. He slowly removed his hands from my cheeks which had left a burning sensation. This guy is hot, he is perfect physically but internally he is rotten! There's nothing good about him on the inside...

Him- give me a kiss

I gave him a kiss, he put his hands under my tshirt and started squeezing me very hard that i struggled to breath a little. My hands were around his neck, our lips were still close to each other i could feel his warm breath hitting against my lips which turned a bit cold because my lower lip was a bit wet...

If only it was possible for him to fall out of love with Lihle i know i can have him all to myself..

Him- If you do anything and i mean anything to cause problems between me and my wife Yaya, i will kill you!!

After saying that we continued kissing.

.

[09/27, 21:50] Ron: ¥04LIHLE

Last night i found it hard to maintain a peaceful sleep because of the cramps and this morning the pain threshold was unbearable i was rolling in bed, i have drank 2 sachets of Grandpa again but they weren't working. Not only did the cramps get worse but my bleeding was worse too..

The door flung open and my Mother stormed in, i had sent her a message...

Mom- Lihle yini? (what's wrong)

Me- I cannot take the cramps anymore Mom- Cramps? What cramps?

She pulled the bed covers down and saw that i was bleeding profusely, the bleeding has even stained the sheets..

Mom- Nkosi yami Lihle! (my Lord) Me- It's really painful Mama

Mom- when did it start? Me- Yesterday

Mom- and you kept quiet? Lihle this is serious you pregnant! You not supposed to be bleeding this much let alone feeling cramps

She went to the wardrobe and took out a dress.. Mom- Come on i am taking you to the hospital

Me- Mom no!

Mom- Lihle you might bleed to death Me- It's my Lobola negotiations today

Mom- They can wait your life is more important

Me- Mom no please.. I have been waiting for too long

Mom- Lihle..

Me- I just need pain killers for the cramps and then after the negotiations you can take me to the hospital

Nomsa walked in.. Nomsa- Lihle i..

She noticed that i was crying.. Nomsa- what's wrong?

Mom- she's in pain and she's bleeding a lot Nomsa- Ini? (what)

Mom- I am taking her to the hospital

Me- I can't go to the hospital i wanna have my negotiations

Nomsa- right now the important thing is you Me- Sandile's Uncles traveled far

Mom- I will call uMaKhumalo she will tell them we can have the negotiations some other time! right

now your health is important

This is unfair i have been waiting for this day for too long for this..

.

. NDILE

I was at some flower shop that morning, wanted to get Lihle some welcome homeflowers.

I looked at the flourist who was clearly judging me with her look.

Me- I don't even know what kind of flowers she likes

Her- I always say red roses are the safest flowers to go with

Me- I don't even know if she likes flowers

Her- Most girls do like flowers, it's a perfect gesture for romance

This would be better if it was Yaya, i know what she likes. I know she likes white roses, i know she is crazy about a DKNY perfume but Lihle i have been with her for 10 years now i don't even know what her favorite colour is. My phone rang i took it out and it was my Mother, i ignored the call..

Flourist- I still think red roses will do Me- You the expect

My phone kept on ringing busy disturbing me.. Me- Sorry about that

Her- not an important call? Me- No

My relationship with my Mother is not perfect and also its not so bad, I restrain from being that much close to her because a part of me is still very angry at her. She allowed the abuse to keep on going which traumatized and damaged me together with my Sister..

Me- you know what just give me white roses Her- I will do that

I took my phone out and I also had a message from her which read: "Lihle is in hospital"

I called out the flourist.. Me- excuse me miss She came to me..

Me- will it be possible to have them delivered? Her- Yes but it's going to cost you extra

Me- I don't mind

She gave me a paper and a pad.. Her- Address please

Her- You don't wanna write a note?

Me- No it's fine she will know who they from

I paid then walked out, i called my Mother when i was going to my car.

Mom- Ndile i have been calling you

Me- i know i was busy.. What happened to Hlehle?

Mom- I don't have much information but her Mother said she was

bleeding and they rushed her to the hospital

Me- Bleeding?

Mom- Yes Ndile.. I still think we should've told your Father about the negotiations the Ancestors are not happy

Me- Are you fucken kidding me?

Mom- ung'thuka nges'lungu? (are you swearing at me in English)

Me- I don't want him knowing anything about my life

Mom- When you graduated we didn't even tell him

Me- Mom he is in jail! Let him stay there my wife is in hospital i don't need to be dealing with this!

.

. YAYA

When i am not doing anything i like to sleep a lot and even wake up at 12:00, this morning i needed my sleep i needed my rest from the night i had with Sandile. Sex with him is not just any typical random sex, there's a lot that goes in and i end up with a sore vagina and an aching body. I looked at my wrists i still had marks from when he tied me up hard that the rope cut through my skin and had his way with me, i used to hate bondage but now im slowly getting used to it..

I heard the door bell ring, i was alone my roommate has gone to visit home..

I got up from the bed only wearing my bumshort, my breasts were exposed i don't wear a bra when i sleep at night. I went and opened the door, this delivery man was standing at my door step he didn't expect to see me half naked he looked down.

Him- Uhm delivery for Miss Yaya

I took the flowers and signed for them..Me- Thank you

Him- Pleasure

He walked away and i closed the door. I looked at the flowers i know they from Sandile, it's his way of saying "Good morning" I went and threw

them in the trash bin and then went back to bed. I want his money not flowers!

.

To be continued [09/27, 21:51] Ron: ¥05LIHLE

I felt a gentle sensation running on my forehead i could feel that someone was gently running their hand on my forehead all the way to my braids. I remember being rushed to the hospital, i remember my Mother rushing inside to get a Nurse to come with a wheelchair while Nomsa tried to keep me calm in the car. I have never felt such an excruciating pain in my whole entire life what was happening in my womb it was more like they put hundreds of burning coals that's how bad the cramps were. That is all i remember, i remember being taken to the hospital what happened next i don't remember..

Before i could open my eyes i knew Sandile was by my side, i know his touch and the smell of his after shave together with the smell of his cologne. I slowly opened my eyes and I was still feeling drowsy but the cramps were no longer there, i didn't feel any cramps anymore..

Ndile- How are you feeling?

Me- Better.. The cramps are better He slightly smiled..

Ndile- I am glad you not feeling pain anymore Me- How is the baby?

He kept quiet.. Me- Sandile

Ndile- we will discuss that later you should rest

I looked at him for a while studying his facial expression, he couldn't even look me in the eye..

Me- I lost our baby didn't i?

Ndile- What matters is that you safe i don't

know what i would've done if i lost you I turned and faced the other way..

Ndile- Nana..

Me- I wanna be alone Ndile- don't shut me out

Me- I wanna be alone please He kissed me on my cheek..

Ndile- I love you I will come and see you later He walked out..

This is all my fault if i acted sooner and quicker when I felt the cramps maybe my baby would still be alive. I know what i did was stupid, it was very stupid but I have been with Sandile for 10 years. He was my first boyfriend i have never been with anyone else other than him, i was 15 when our relationship started i don't know anyone but him. Within those years our relationship wasn't a walk in the park, Buhle is

the only girl i know that Sandile has cheated on me with but deep down i know that she might have not been the only one. We fell into a distant relationship when he went to tertiary i almost lost him because he didn't call that much anymore he used school as an excuse of not keeping in touch. I love him with all my heart, again how do you move on from a relationship of 10 years? Where would i start picking up the pieces? I am scared, i am scared that some day just some day he might fall in love with someone else and leave me. I know that he is a bit impossible to handle, he has bipolar he has deep and dark anger issues but he has never laid his hand on me. We do fight and he would just end up walking away to calm himself down, i don't think he would ever find a reason to put his hand on me because he loves me. I have read about bipolar and i am proud of Sandile for taking medication and going to therapy he is trying to be a better man than his

father..

I really thought that the Lobola negotiations and the baby would ground him to never ever think of cheating but i lost both, and since i lost both i have opened up the door for him to find it easy to cheat on me again..

.

. YAYA

I ended up waking up i bathe, ate breakfast, watched my favorite reality show Love and Hip Hop Atlanta and then after that i decided to take my books and study a little..

My phone rang and it was a call from home, i hate calls from home because it's always about them asking me for money. My family is very weird they don't even acknowledge the fact that i am a student, to them i live in the big city i am making money and i should support them. My

Mother would go as far as using emotional blackmail to get money from me so that she can go and drink it all up with her boyfriends in the tavern...

The only person I care about is my Grandmother she is the only one who has ever shown me unconditional love..

Me- Hello MaMa- Yaya

Me- Yes Ma yimi (it's me)

Her voice was scratchy i could sense that hangover got her bad..

Ma- Yaya uGogo uyagula (your Grandmother is sick)

Me- What's wrong?

Ma- Hai mina angisazi (i don't know anymore)Me- did you take her to the clinic?

Ma- Clinic Yaya kodwa? Uyahlanza (she's vomiting)

Me- when did she start?

Ma- Last night.. Uyahlanza ngapha uyathulula (she is vomiting and has diarrhea)

Me- How much money do you want Ma to take her to the Dr?

Ma- I thought you would never askMe- can i talk to Grams?

Ma- ulele shame she's weak (she is sleeping shame she's weak)

I know that she is lying to me but it's okay now i am not in the mood to argue..

Ma- R350 nje will do

Me- I will send it tomorrow Shoprite money market

Ma- extra R100 Yaya please to buy her instant soft porridge and liquids she hasn't eaten anything

Me- I will send you R500 Ma

Ma- Ohhh kodwa Yaya uyingelosi yethu (you are our angel)

I heard someone ringing the door bell..Me- I have to go Ma

Ma- are you going to work? Me- No Ma.. I am still studying

Ma- awukaqedi Kanti? (you not done)Someone rang the door bell again..

Me- Mama bye

I hung up and got up from the couch to go and open..

It was Sandile..Me- Ndile

He walked in with his hands in his pockets iclosed the door..

Me- I didn't know that you were coming

He had his back facing me his hands were stillin his pockets, he didn't say anything..

Me- I'll pour you a glass of whiskeyHim- Lihle had a miscarriage

Me- Ohw

Him- I didn't even know that she was pregnantMe- I am sorry

I went to the cupboard to get the bottle ofwhiskey..

Him- She's broken and it breaks me to see herin that state

He turned around..

Me- what caused the miscarriage?He walked up to me..

Him- I don't know

He noticed the flowers in the bin, he took themout..

Him- You threw away R1500?Me- Ndile i..

Him- It's fine

He put them on the counter..Him- the glass of whiskey

I extended it to him..Him- thank you

He took a sip and put the glass down..Him- Plans?

Me- No just wanted to studyHe nodded..

Me- Let me clear the text books from the couchHim- Okay

I walked pass him and he pushed me againstthe wall, i fell..

Him- You threw away R1500?

Even if i try to get up from the floor it would betoo late, he came and started kicking me. He used all his strength..

Him- You threw away R1500? Ung'jwayela kabi!!

This is the beast unleashed in him, his dark sidehas taken over and all i need to do is pray that he snaps from it quickly before he kills me..

No matter how much he beats me, he is alwayscareful not to touch my face.. Now i am suffering for Lihle being broken.

.

. LIHLE

My Mother came in..

Mama- How are you feeling baby? I didn't say anything..

Mama- I am sorry Lihle

I closed my eyes and tears fell, i shouldn't have been dwelling on the thoughts of Sandile possibly cheating on me, i shouldn't have thought a lot about the yellow bone Buhle who has always been a threat in my relationship. I shouldn't have thought about how she almost ruined my relationship, i shouldn't have had those insecurities that Sandile might be fucking her again my baby would still be alive..

I turned and looked at my Mother.

Me- When i get discharged i wanna move in with him

I know my Mother doesn't support me living with Sandile while he hasn't paid lobola, even though she likes Sandile we have always agreed that i will move in with him when he has paid Lobola...

Mama- let's talk about that later now let's focus on you getting better I faced the other way, she put her hand on my shoulder...

Mama- I will only let you visit him for two weeks you two share the same pain maybe you can comfort each other better, but when you are emotionally strong you have to come back home so that the Lobola negotiations can proceed

Me- Thank you

.

[09/27, 21:55] Ron: ¥06LIHLE

Sandile's family they are firm believers in Ancestors and they very cultural too. That's the only thing that causes a bit of tension between my family and his because my Mother is very religious and doesn't really believe in Ancestors, but nevertheless she doesn't disrespect or question the beliefs of the Khumalo family. In my family we also do have a few relatives that believes in Ancestors but my Mother has kept a bit of a distance from them to avoid

unnecessary fights. The only reason why she doesn't go against Sandile's family with their beliefs is because she values my relationship with Sandile too much to ruin it..

Sandile's Mother and Sandile's Uncle from his paternal side of the family came in to see me..

MaKhumalo- Koti how are you feeling now?

Even though i didn't want any company i had no choice but to be respectful and communicate with them, they my in laws and i always have to show respect no matter what..

MaKhumalo- Siyaxolisa ngalento ekwehlele (we are sorry for what happened to you)

I nodded..

I was still holding my Mother's hand she was standing beside me, i needed her to be present in case all of this gets too much for me..

Uncle- uzile nje uSandile? (did Sandile come) Me- Yebo Malume uzile (Yes uncle he did come)

He looked around...

Uncle- Bekumele nje ngabe sishisa impepho (we should be burning an incense)

MaKhulo- Kahle Babo mkhulu this is a hospital we can do that at home when Koti gets discharged

My Mother and i looked at each other..

Uncle- Konke nje kwaka Sandile akuhambi kahle (Sandile's things aren't going well)

MaKhumalo- That's not true

Uncle- It is true we were supposed to pay Lobola today and look what happened..

Amadlozi ka Khumalo amflathele (The Khumalo Ancestors have turned their backs on him)

My Mother tightened her grip..

Uncle- As long as he still holds so much anger for his Father and wants nothing to do with him nothing of his is going to work yiko futhi ahlanya so (that's why he is even crazy)

Makhumalo- Sandile is not crazy your Brother put him through a lot the abuse damaged him

Uncle- uKarabo uright nje (Karabo is fine)

Makhumalo- Karabo was very young when everything happened she doesn't remember much unlike Sandile

Uncle- Mina nje ngithi kumele akhulume noGodfrey ahlabelle Amadlozi axolise Konke okwakhe kuzolunga (he must talk to Godfrey, slaughter for the Ancestors and ask for forgiveness then everything of his will go well)

Makhumalo shook her head...

Uncle- uKoti ngeke abathole abantwana uzolokeechithekelwa yizisu until uSandile axole (Lihle will never have children she will ever miscarry until Sandile forgives)

My Mother couldn't hold herself..

Mom- uxolo bab'khumalo ngiyacela nje ungalinge uqalekise indodakazi yami (Mr

Khumalo please don't curse my Daughter)

Uncle- I am not cursing her the Khumalo Ancestors don't know her that's why she miscarried because she was not introduced to the Ancestors for them to protect her and her pregnancy

Mom- My Daughter having a miscarriage has nothing to do with the Ancestors! Only God knows why she miscarried

Uncle- It's this religion that makes you to be ignorant when it comes to your culture! Look at me MaCele i am successful i have a butchery my Ancestors are with me

Mom- God is with you! Me- Mama please

Mom- I am sorry Hlehle but i will not stand here and let this man disrespect my religion i have been very respectful to what they believe in! He has no right to stand here and say your miscarriage is due to the Ancestors if so then the Khumalo Ancestors are evil!

Uncle- Mayebabo badelelwa abokhokho bethuwumfazi othi uyakhonza kodwa ebe ebhekela phantsi amasiko ethu (our Ancestors are being disrespected by a religious woman who

despises our culture)

Makhumalo- Ngiyacela bandla bheka niyamcasula uHlehle (i am begging both of you because now you upsetting Hlehle)

I closed my eyes with tears streaming down my cheeks, i wish Sandile was here i cannot deal with all of this alone..

.

. NDILE

I was in my car i had a lot of thoughts running through my head.

I felt like i was losing my mind, my sanity

everything was getting too much. I closed my eyes and held on tight to the wheel, i couldn't take it all in. Lihle is hurting, Yaya is hurting. Yaya! My thoughts started gathering to give me back my sanity. Today i went overboard, today i beat her up too much. She cried, she screamed, she begged me to stop and i couldn't. I wanted to hear her scream in agony, i wanted my Mother not to be the only woman who has ever experienced such brutal abuse. It's wrong that i am doing this to Yaya, it's wrong that she puts up with it but it was wrong for my Mother too.

Just like Yaya, my Mother didn't deserve to go through that too.. After realizing what I have done i got out of the car and ran back to the flat, she was still laying on the floor crying. She's crying, a cry is better than silence it means she's still alive..

I didn't know what to do i didn't know how to approach her, i have never done this i have never approached her after beating her up.

My heart shuttered on the floor as i saw her in that much pain, did i really do that? Is this whatshe puts up with everytime? What kind of a person am i? How can i hurt a woman like this??

I went to her and crouched, i picked her up andshe flinched in pain.. I was trying to be very gentle but every part of her body seemed badly bruised other than her face. She put her hands around my neck and laid her head on my shoulder just close to my neck and cried, i carried her to the bedroom andsat down on the bed with her still in my arms and crying. Her cry tore deep inside, i felt tears burning my eyes i wanted to say something but my lips were just shaking vigorously..

.

[09/27, 21:55] Ron: ¥07NDILE

I had no choice but to call my personal Doctor,

Dr Nkabinde. Nkabinde comes through for me in anything and everything with just an extra thousand or two if it's a critical job. He is the one who mostly treats Yaya's bruises after i have lost my temper and he is very discreet about everything. Yaya was in so much pain that she was hurting me, i gave her pain killersbut they weren't helping she was spitting out blood which worried me a lot. This time aroundi have really went far..

She is the most strongest woman i have evercame across and for her to be crying like thisand flinching in pain when i touch her shows that she was in excruciating pain indeed.

I was pacing up and down looking at her layingon the bed, Nkabinde was taking his time and he was frustrating me. I went up to Yaya and lifted her tshirt up, the bruises looked highly disturbing.

Me- Are you still in pain?

She nodded. I held her hand and kissed it...Me- Nkabinde is coming

The door bell rang..Me- It's about time!

I stood up and went to open for him..Me- What took you so long?

Nkabinde- I am on call

He had his briefcase with him and his stethoscopes..

Me- Follow me

I led him to Yaya's bedroom..

Nkabinde went up to her and performed an external examination.

Nkabinde- I am going to turn you okay?Yaya nodded..

Nkabinde gently turned her and she closed her eyes..

He lifted her tshirt i think the Bruises also freaked him out a little..
He pressed his hand against the bruises and that must've been
painful because she screamed, she couldn't hold back anymore..

Yaya- Ahhhhhhhhhhh Me- Nkabinde be gentle

Nkabinde- I am doing my best here i need to know how much
damage has been done

Me- She was spitting blood Nkabinde shook his head..

Nkabinde- This time around i have to take her in Me- No..

Nkabinde- She might have broken ribs and bleeding internally, the
broken ribs might be piercing through her organs too. I need to take
X rays and operate if needed

Me- You can do it at your surgery right?

Nkabinde- I don't have the necessary equipment i have to take her to the hospital

Me- They will wanna know what happened

Nkabinde- She might bleed to death MrKhumalo!

Me- Nkabinde if she gets admitted you will have to write a report i cannot go to jail for this okay?

I looked at Yaya...

Me- How am I going to explain to my wife what i got arrested for? I cannot go to jail!

I cannot get arrested for the same reason as my Father what's going to become of Lihle if she finds out about this? I don't want her knowing this side of me i don't want her to think that she will be marrying a monster..

Nkabinde- Mr Khumalo we don't have much time

Yaya was expelling blood from her mouth and shivering..

I didn't know what to do i started pacing aroundwith my hands on my head..

Me- Can't you give her something?

Nkabinde- No!! Dammit Sandile i have to seehow much damage you caused her

Yaya started mumbling something..

Me- She's saying something what is she saying?Nkabinde- I don't know i can't hear her

Yaya shook her head and tried talking..

Nkabinde- You don't have to say anything saveyour strength

Nkabinde looked at me..

Me- What about Morphine the last time yougave her morphine right?

Nkabinde- I can't anymore i can no longer sneakout Morphine from the hospital it's too risky

Me- There has to be another way

Nkabinde- I am afraid there isn't! Mr Khumalo i don't like getting into your personal affairs but if you ever cared for this girl you would allow me to take her to the hospital... Please or else she will die

I looked at Yaya again she was still shivering and her eyes were rolling at the back of her head..

Nkabinde- She is dying in the most painful way, do you wanna have that on your conscience?

.

. LIHLE

I called Sandile again using my Mother's phone and he wasn't picking up, tears fell again. I have called him more than 5 times and his phone rings then takes me straight to voicemail after awhile. It's a Saturday afternoon he is not working, he is not attending therapy why isn't he

picking up? He knows how much i need him. Ineed him more than i have ever needed him especially after what his Uncle said..

Me- Sandile pick up your phone please!

Is he with another woman? What's happening?When he started acting like this was when Buhle came into the page...

My Mother walked in holding a pack of fruits...

Mom- Are you still upset over what Sandile'suncle said?

I wiped my tears..

Mom- He also upset me tooShe came to me..

I have bought you some fruits you need to eatsomething..

Me- Sandile is not picking upI handed her the phone..

Mom- Maybe he is busy

Me- with what Mama? He is supposed to be here!!! (yelling)
She looked at me like "Did you just yell at me". Me- Ngiyaxolisa (i am sorry)

Mom- i am starting to be very worried about you now
I faced the other way..

Mom- Lihle the way you love Sandile yazi you have made him your everything, you have made him your God! Bona manje you cannot even function without him, that's not a life Hlehle

Mom doesn't understand has she ever been this much in love?

Mom- Your life Lihle revolves around him too much that you can't find strength to press on when he is not around. What happened to Lihle? What happened to my baby? You used to talk about your dreams, things that you wanted to achieve. Lihle i.. I am scared for you i am scared

that the day Sandile is going to hurt you, you might not be able to handle the pain and you will kill yourself.

Me- Sandile will never hurt me I closed my eyes..

Me- He loves me too much

Mom- But he has hurt you before even though "loves you too much"

[09/27, 21:55] Ron: ¥08NDILE

I allowed Nkabinde to take Yaya to the hospital and I drove to my house I didn't want to accompany her to the hospital because I don't know where my fate lies, is she gonna talk and have me locked up? You can never really conclude with an abused woman. Today they seem fine like they will never talk then tomorrow you being surprised by the cops..

I cannot begin to think how Lihle is going to

react should that happen, she's already broken as it is this is going to break her more. I have tried to hide this part of my life from her i don't want her to know this side of me..

I was breaking anything that my hand landed on at the house i felt like i was losing it, i am talking about seriously losing it. I haven't been taking my meds right i skip a few days because honestly i don't think they working for me. I still feel the same way and there's no change in my mental state. I don't know what resides deep inside of me, but whatever it is i have no control over it. I am trying to find the exact words on how to explain my mental state but no word can explain what I am or what i have become..

I sat in the corner against the wall with the whole house dark, i have broken the bulbs pieces of glasses were on the floor. I have broken almost everything from plates, mugs, glasses and everything else..

I had disturbing thoughts, nothing was making sense i don't wanna feel like this i hate feeling like this..

Tears fell as i was trying to figure out what was wrong with me, what was happening to me. My mind is a cage where dark thoughts are imprisoned just like prisoners sometimes the thoughts are let loose for a while to torture me, then i end up torturing those close to me..

I was turning into a beast and no one can save me, nothing can save me..

.

. YAYA

I don't know how i ended up at the hospital because i was out of it all i know is that the pain on my left rib was better than how it was. I have high tolerance to pain, i have been hurt a lot that i don't hurt i am numb to pain but what Sandile

did he broke me physically. I was still feeling abit dizzy though I think they gave me strong meds..

Dr Nkabinde was standing there as i opened myeyes, he was looking directly at me. He wasn't alone, he was with a gentleman who wore a police uniform and one who was wearing formal pants and a shirt..

Nkabinde: how are you feeling?

He took out a small light from his coat andstarted shining it in my eyes...

Me: Still weak and drowsy

Nkabinde: i sedated you earlier on and alsogave you morphine
The gentleman who wasn't wearing a policeuniform cleared his throat.

Nkabinde: Detective did you really have to comenow? My patient just woke up

Detective: You do your job and i do mine

Nkabinde looked at me..

Nkabinde: part of my job is that when i suspect that a patient of mine is a victim of domestic abuse i have to call the cops

What is Nkabinde doing? He knows Sandile is crazy he knows that he can take him out anyday..

Nkabinde: If you feel strong enough then you can talk to the Detective and let him know what happened

I looked at the Detective who was standing there hoping that i say something..

Nkabinde: If you not ready to talk now it's okay they can always come back

I nodded..

Nkabinde: Tomorrow? I nodded again..

Nkabinde: You heard my patient

The Detective came closer..Detective: Mam'..

Nkabinde: Please respect my job as much as irespect yours

The Detective looked at me for a long time..Nkabinde: Detective

Detective: we will come back tomorrow thenThey left, i looked at

Nkabinde..

Me: what are you doing?Nkabinde: My job

He took his stethoscopes and then ran themover on my chest...

Nkabinde: breath for meMe: Nkabinde Nkabinde: Yaya

Me: what are you doing?

He put his stethoscopes around his neck again..

Nkabinde: Your priorities have to change now
Me: what are you talking about?

Your blood work came back it was a standard procedure..

Me: and?

Nkabinde: did you know that you pregnant?
Me: Pre..???

Nkabinde: You pregnant Yaya

I cannot be pregnant it's not right..

.

. LIHLE

I still received no call from Sandile he didn't even bother coming back yesterday to see me. It was a Sunday morning and usually at this time i am at church but i wasn't, instead i was stuck at the hospital. When i went to bath this morning I noticed that i had a stitch means they

operated me yesterday and i need to know whyso i asked the Nurse to call the Doctor to comeand explain..

The Doctor looked at me..Me: I was operated right?Dr: Yes you were

Me: Why?

Dr: in terms that you would understand the babywas growing in the wrong place after fertilization the egg didn't move to the endometrium in the womb but it stayed in the fallopian tube

Me: what does that mean?

Dr: As it grew it forced your tube to expand that's why you were feeling the sharp pain but unfortunately the fallopian tube was not a healthy environment for the baby to grow that'swhy you had the miscarriage and we had to remove your tube as it was scarred

I took a moment to process this..Dr: I am sorry

Me: will i still have children?

Dr: You still have your other tube Yes it is possible for you to have children

I closed my eyes..

Dr: at least you still have the other tube not all is lost

I covered my face with my hands..

Me: Why is all of this happening to me?

The Dr came and put her hand on my shoulder..

.

To be continued [09/27, 21:55] Ron: ¥09NDILE

I stood up from the corner when my sanity returned back to me i looked around and i had

turned the whole house upside down, pieces of broken glasses were on the floor. I got my phone out and checked the time, it was just after 14:00 it dawned on me that yesterday when i got back home i broke everything and then sat down at the corner until today. I cannot even remember what really went through my mind as i was sitting there, i was even lucky that i didn't suffer from hypothermia i am thankful that we still enjoying summer so it gets hot toot night. I am now a danger if i can be out of it that i sit at the corner the whole night with my mind completely shut, what more severe damage can i cause? My throat was sore and i was very sleepy but unfortunately i cannot stay here. I am going to need someone to come and fix everything, in the meantime i will just drive to my Mom's place and stay there for a while until my house is fixed. I made my way to the bedroom to pack a few things while calling my Mother in the process..

Mom: SandileMe- Mama

Mom: kuya kanjani? (how are you holding up)Me- I am fine..

Unjani uLihle? (how is Lihle) Mom: Hai kuyabheda (it's not going well)

Me: Well i am on my way thereMom: on a Sunday?

Me: Yes

Mom: are you going to sleep over?Me: Yes

Mom: Why? What about work?

Me: I will drive to work Ma it's just going to be a2 hours drive

Mom: Kanti kwenzakalani? (what's going on)Me: Nothing

Mom: If it's nothing th..

Me: Eyyy Ma please stop with this endless questions or yini awung'funi kwakho? (don't you want me at your house)

Mom- Angishongo njalo (i didn't say that)Me- Sorry

Mom- I just want to know if everything is fine with you I am your Mother i care

But she didn't care enough to leave my Father before the abuse traumatized us..

Me: Everything is fine and i will be there maybe later

Mom: Okay i will cook your favorite mealMe: thank you

Mom: see you when you get here thenMe: Bye

I continued packing and i could feel that i wasn't going to be able to drive at this state, i am too tired i need to get some rest. I took my phone

again and called Nkabinde, he only answered on the 3rd ring..

Nkabinde: Khumalo Me: how is she?

Nkabinde: she is holding in there

Me: did she say anything to the cops?

Nkabinde: not yet but she will be talking to them again tomorrow

Me: I see

Nkabinde: don't take this personal i had to call the cops.. I am only doing my job

Me: you don't have to explain i understand Nkabinde: I have to go and check up on her Me: Okay thank you for the update Nkabinde:

anytime

I exhaled and threw myself on the bed, Yayacannot say anything to the authorities..

. YAYA

Nkabinde made his way in while holding my file...

Nkabinde: how are you feeling? How is the pain? Me: I am still fine

He went through my file...

Nkabinde: Tomorrow you going to have a minor operation to fix your broken ribs

Me: Okay

I looked around..

Me: who is paying my hospital bill? This is not a public hospital

Nkabinde: The one and only Me: ohw

Nkabinde: are you going to tell him?

Me: How far along am i?Nkabinde: one month

Me: and i didn't know or feel that i was pregnant

Nkabinde: you were under a lot of stress ipresume?

Me: I was

Nkabinde: you even lucky the baby survived allthe stress and the brutal beating

Me: I guess so He looked at me..

Nkabinde: Is it mine?

Me: uyahlanya? (are you crazy)He laughed..

Nkabinde: I am just playing with you

I slept with Nkabinde a few weeks back when Sandile refused to pay my rent because he wassuspecting that I was involved with someone

else too, to make ends meet i had to sleep with Nkabinde but it was one time and we used a condom. It's easy for someone to say "Get a part time job" but let's be honest how many people are working with this unstable economy? Where will i get a job where i will work weekends and be able to afford rent, my fees, food, and my family? Let's be realistic for a while. I tried applying for NSFAS but they needed an affidavit that my Mother is not working and my alcoholic Mother refused to go with me to the police station talking about school is a waste of time i need to get a job or use my womanhood to make money. I tried applying for a bursary but that didn't go well too so i was forced to go down this route. It's only two years left, i am sure that i can put up with Sandile for just 2 years then when i graduate i will ditch him and move to another place if i have too..

Right now i need to know if i should tell Sandile

about the baby or not? But my first mind tells me that i should have an abortion with the stateof living at home i cannot bring another mouth to feed..

.

. LIHLE

Nomsa had come to see me i was relieved thattomorrow they going to discharge me, i cannotwait to go home be close to my Mother. It wasgetting to me that Sandile didn't come again today i don't know why he is doing this to me and i don't know what his excuse is..

Nomsa: Yooh!! So they removed your tube?I nodded..

Me: It was an ectopic pregnancy

Nomsa: but will you be able to have kids? I mean you still have the other tube

Me: I am scared Nomsa what if i fall pregnant again and then the same thing happens with my other tube, the only tube that i am left with

She squeezed me on my shoulder..

Me: This year nje umuntu unamabhadi (this year a person has bad luck)

Nomsa: nxese sisi (sorry)

Me: on the other hand i don't even know what's going on with Sandile he knows i miscarried but he hasn't called or come to see me

Nomsa: aii kodwa uSandile

Me: I don't know what's happening Nomsa and i don't know what to do

Nomsa: well i have a solution Me: what?

Nomsa: maybe we can see that traditional healer down the road people say that woman is good

Me: Nomsa no

Nomsa: I know ekini ningama krestu (i know at your house you are Christians)

Me: you shouldn't even be suggesting something like that

Nomsa: Lo Mama can help you Hlehle she can throw the bones and see what's going on if there is a third person in your relationship she will see it and help you

I looked at her..

Me: are you serious?

Nomsa: Yes just consider it and your Mother doesn't have to know Consulting a sangoma? that seems a bit extreme now..

.

[09/27, 21:55] Ron: ¥10NDILE

I arrived very late at home my Mother and my Sister were already sleeping. I was thankful that I found them already sleeping the house was dark, I didn't bother knocking I went straight to my room at the back. My Parent's house is a 4 room house with two extra rooms outside, one being mine. That's where I sleep everytime when I come to visit..

I woke up the following day at around 09:00am I called in sick at work, I just want to spend this day with Hlehle. I got out of my room I know my Mother is already awake at this time and my little sister has probably gone to work. Karabo is 20 years old and she is working in town at Woolworths, after matric since her results weren't so impressive she forfeited supplementing she had no intentions of going to tertiary she just wanted to work and get her own. I got inside the house and my Mother was on top of the chair taking down curtains busy humming a church song..

Me: Ma

She turned and looked at me..Mom: Sandile

She got down from the chair and came to hugme..

Mom: I saw your car parked outside why didn'tyou drive it inside the yard?

Me: I didn't have the key to the big gate and ididn't wanna wake you guys up

I went and got a glass of water so that i candrink my pills..

Mom: How are you? Me: I am fine and you?

Mom: I am good i just wanna wash curtains

Me: and i wanna go and fetch Hlehle from thehospital

Mom: I think that's a good idea

I drank my pills..

Mom: Karabo left at 7:30am Me: How is she holding up?

Mom: she's holding up pretty well

Me: unesoka? (does she have a boyfriend)

Mom: ufuna ng'tshele uzokwazi ukulisabisa? Awukahle (you want me to tell you so that you can threaten him? Wait a minute)

I turned and looked at her..

Me: Ma can I ask you something? She nodded..

Me: I want Hlehle to move in with us for the time being that im going to be staying here, i hope you don't mind

Her face lit up...

Mom: Why would i mind? Uyazi ngiyamthandau Hlehle nje (you know i love Hlehle)

Me: I just want her close to me with everything that's happened

Mom: Ya kodwa komele ukhulume noMaCele (you will have to talk to MaCele first)

She climbed the chair again..

Mom: uluhlaza kulamalanga (she is very bitter these days)

She almost fell from the chair..

Me: Eyy Ma hlika i will do it (get down i will do it) I helped her to get down..

Me: Your knee is still giving you a problem? Mom: Kakhulu (too much)

My Father once struck my Mother's knee with a knobkerrie long time ago ever since from then her knee has forever been giving her a problem

.

.

YAYA

I had asked Nkabinde earlier on when he was here to borrow me his phone so that i can call my best friend Candice to come over, Candice is not different from me other than that she is seeing multiple guys and she doesn't get beaten up. At the campus we slay we one of those girls who are envied. Most students do label us whatever they want but we don't care, we well taken care off and that's all that matters. She has a car, she drives a Renault clioher blesser is paying the car installment... She has one that pays her car installment and one that pays for her rent and gives her an allowance..

Candy: Girlfriend what happened?Me: Sandile happened

Candy: what did you do to him?

Me: I threw away flowers that he bought for me

Candy: how much were they?Me: R1500

Candy: Yaya that's a lot of money to just throwaway

Me: I know girlfriend but I have no use forflowers

She fixed the duvet..

Candy: Well next time don't throw away hisflowers

Me: i cannot wait to have this surgery and getout of here

Candy: at least you having it today

Me: i have to go back to school i cannot afford to miss classes and be left behind Sandile won'tpay if i fail

Candy: girlfriend why don't you ask me to hookyou up

Me: No Candy

Candy: My guys are less violent than NdileMe: He would kill me

Candy: not if my guys kill him firstMe: I am fine with Ndile

She stood there and looked at me..Me: what?

Candy: are we catching feelings?Me: Catch..

Candy: are we falling for Sandile?Me: Pshhh don't be ridiculous

Candy: am I being ridiculous?

Me: go find Dr Nkabinde and ask him at whattime my surgery is
and stop annoying me

She walked away..

Candy: we going to take girlfriend, we are goingto talk

.

. LIHLE

This morning i was with Fikile than Nomsa, Nomsa had an early shift and Fikile was onlygoing to clock in later. She had came with adress for me since my Mother was at work she's going to drive me home..

Me: out of all my clothes you picked this dress?Fikile: i like that dress it's pretty

Me: it has a lot of flowersShe started laughing..

Me: what?

She started singing..

Fikile: "Noba ungxiba ilokhwe enegqabi ndimuMadam.."

I laughed..

Fikile: "qal'pha kum uze endodeni.."

I joined in..

Me: "Ndyak'shiya.."

Fikike: "Noba unganxiba ilokhwe enegqabi ndimuMadam.."

We laughed..

Fikile: I wanted to sing it for Buhle down at the street after the Lobola negotiations

Me: Ya if only they happened

Fikile: don't be sad you guys can always pick another date then I'll get to sing the song for Buhle

I laughed again.. Me: you are crazy

Fikile: It's an interesting song Voice: It's very interesting indeed

We both looked at the door and it was Sandile looking handsome as always, for a moment i forgot that i was even angry at him. Fikile

looked at me..

Fikile: Usashisa (he is still hot)Me: Fiks

Fikile: what?

She looked at Sandile..

Sandile: can i please have a word with my person?

Fikile nodded..

Sandile: matter of fact ill take her home thankyou Fikile

Fikile looked at me.. Me: I am going with you

Sandile: No she's going with meFikile was confused..

Sandile: i got it from here Fikile thank you

I wish It was Nomsa who came to fetch me instead of Fikile, Fikile is very soft especially

when it comes to Sandile. Fikile: I will call you Hle Me: Okay
She walked out..

Sandile sat on the bed and looked at me..

Him: I know that i am in a lot of trouble so let's talk

I ignored him..

He reached out for my arm and then pulled me closer to him..

Him: i don't wanna fight i just wanna talk I got emotional..

He sat me on his lap and wiped my tears..

Him: I just want us to talk.. Can you do that for me?

I nodded..

He kissed me on my cheek..

I am angry at him, i am trying to be still angry athim but he is making it difficult for me right now. When he gets like this he eats my heart out..

.

[09/27, 22:00] Ron: BROKEN

¥11

LIHLE

I was now sitting on the bed next to him he washolding my hand but we have been quiet for a while it's amazing how two days can drift us apart, we always have a lot to say to each otherbut today we had no words. I cannot blame mymiscarriage being the reason why me and Sandile fail to communicate, since he moved from the hood our relationship started being shaky things started changing. I love him i don'twanna lose him but it feels like I am already losing him..

Him: Ngiyazi ukuthi ukwatile MaKhumalo (iknow that you are angry)

I got my hand from his grip..

Me: I am not Angry Sandile i am hurt We kept quiet again..

Him: Can i be honest with you? I nodded..

He held my hand again..

Him: When i found out that you miscarried i didn't know how to handle everything but most of all i didn't wanna see you hurting because it was going to hurt me more. Hlehle you know that it's not easy for me to show my emotions i thought being away from you for a while would help me to offload all that i was feeling, i know that it sounds as if like i am making excuses but I couldn't take my pain and your pain at the same time i was going to shut down completely

He exhaled...

Him: There's nothing painful like seeing someone you love hurting and knowing that you cannot take away their pain

He put his hand on my chest..

Him: you might feel the pain much worse than I do, you the one who went through the physical pain you the one who saw the bleeding, you the one who felt the disconnection, you felt the cramps, you felt both the physical and emotional pain.

What he was saying was true that he actually made me tear up..

Me: I never knew that losing a baby could hurt this much

He pulled me closer to him.. Him: I am sorry

He kissed me on my forehead..

Me: We are going to get through this that's why I decided to come here for a few days because I

wanted to be close to you

I raised my head up and looked at him, he wiped my tears with his thumb..

Him: I don't want you to go through this alone
Me: what about work?

Him: I will travel everyday don't worry about that it's not much of a long drive

I rested my head on his shoulder..

Him: I was thinking that you move in at my house for a while just until you are emotionally stable

Me: I would like that but you have to talk to my Mother

He put his hand inside the pocket of his jacket, he came back with a small box..

Him: I know your Mother doubts me at times but I hope this will convince her

He opened the box and it was a thin beautiful

silver ring with diamond stones around it

Him: I know that our culture doesn't believe much in engagement but this is a wedding band it's the 3rd piece of the wedding ring that I bought you, with this wedding band I want you to always remember that you are the only woman in my life the only woman that I will ever love. Let this band be a reminder that you are the only MaKhumalo, no matter what happens no other woman will take that spot from you, well other than my Mother and my Sister
I chuckled.. He slid it in..

Me: It's beautiful

Him: thank you for being with me I know it wasn't easy having to lay your head down on the pillow sometimes not knowing what I was doing and who I was with, thank you for letting me reach my dreams thank you for staying with me and being patient with me.
Ngiyak'thanda

Langelihle Cele (i love you Langelihle Cele)

You know what i have never felt this blessed and loved, Sandile might have fooled around with Buhle and them other girls but he came back to me..

.

. YAYA

I woke up when the Anaesthesia was wearing off i felt a stinging sensation where i had been operated, it was painful but better than the pain that Sandile put me through. I still cannot believe that i am pregnant, i cannot even recall the times when Sandile and i had unprotected sex and the times when we used protection because our sex life always had a lot going on..

Candice walked in...

Her: How are you feeling? Me: Drowsy and in pain

Her: should i call Nkabinde?Me: No i am fine

Her: You have always had high tolerance for pain

She came closer and looked at me..Me: What?

Her: Are you going to tell Sandile about the baby?

Me: what?

Her: I read your file

Me: I am going through a lot right now a baby is the last thing i
wanna think about

Nkabinde walked in.. Nkabinde: and she is awakeHe greeted
Candice..

Nkabinde: how are you feeling?Me: drowsy

Nkabinde: and the pain?Me: not that bad

He jotted something down in my file..Me: when am i going home?

He looked at Candice.. Me: It's fine you can talk

Nkabinde: Sandile hasn't paid your bill yetMe: Did you call him?

Nkabinde: what am i? Your messenger?

Me: He knows that im in hospital why is he doing this? Worse i am here because of him!

Nkabinde: anyway the cops will be here later onto talk to you

Candice: cops?

Nkabinde gave her a stare and then looked atme..

Nkabinde: i have other patients to attend too

page the Nurse if you need somethingHe walked out..

Me: I cannot believe Sandile is doing this tome!

Candice: You don't want a hospital bill up inyour Ass sweetie

She looked around..

Candice: private hospitals are expensiveMe: can i please borrow your phone?

She gave me her phone..Me: thank you

I dialed Sandile's number and it rang..Me: Pick up!

It rang until it went to voicemail...Candice: try him again

I called him again this time he picked up..Him: Khumalo Hello?

Me: Sandile it's Yaya

Him: This is not your number

Me: I know i am using a friend's phoneHe cleared his throat..

Him: what do you want?Really? What do I want?

Me: My Hospital bill is still outstanding Him: I will take care of it when i have timeMe: When you have time?

Him: I am with Lihle, you know you not supposed to call me when i am with Lihle

Me: I didn't know that you were with her.. Sandile i am not asking for you to come here i am just asking for you to settle the hospital billso i can get out of here!!

It was quiet on the other line..Me: Hello?? San..

I looked at the phone..

Candice: did he hang up on you?I gave her the phone back..

Me: He did

Candice: He is going to call backMe: He is not!.. He is with her!

I pulled the covers down.. Candice: what are you doing?Me: going to the toilet

Candice: aren't you supposed to call the Nurse?You going to hurt yourself

I closed my eyes..

Candice: I can pay your hospital bill then Sandilecan pay me

Me: He will pay Candice: I hope soMe: I hope so too

. NDILE

Lihle and i we were having breakfast at some restaurant. When i came back from answering that call she was sitting there and glancing at the wedding band while smiling..

I walked up to her. Her: That took long

I am glad the call came through while I went to fetch my wallet from the car, had it come through while i was sitting with her i don't know what excuse i would've come up with..

Me: sorry I forgot were i had put it I sat down..

Me: so did you order something? Her: No i was waiting for you

Me: I have been meaning to ask you something

Her: What is that?

Me: what do you wanna do now that you done with your learnership?

Her: i really haven't thought about that

Me: really? You were always talking about..

Her: Sandile i just lost my baby the Lobola negotiations didn't happen i really don't think talking about my future career is helping

Me: I was just asking

Her: What? You want me gone so that you can get up to your not so good acts

Me: excuse me? She kept quiet..

Her: futhi i am no longer hungry

Me: uk'buza nje sowuyakwata (just by asking you already getting mad)

Her: ngicela ungise ekhaya (please take me home)

She stood up and walked out..

.

[09/27, 22:01] Ron: ¥12NDILE

I dropped Lihle at home and she went straight to her bedroom she closed the door and cried herself to sleep, i would've comforted her but she seemed very mad at me for reasons knownto her. I sat in the lounge and waited until she fell asleep i stood at the door and watched her peacefully sleeping. I wonder where it all went wrong, she used to be very ambitious at some point i thought that she was going to seek a career in motivational speaking because she used to motivate the Youth at her church. Now she has become very obsessive about being with me, i am not complaining but it's not healthy and i don't want her to be like that. I don't want her to give up on her dreams, i don't want marriage to sit her down. I am not

completely for a woman lazing around all day in the house, i don't want her being dependent on me what if i am no longer there what would she do?

I wish she could find that ambition again, i wish she was more like Yaya. Yaya is very adamant to reach her goals, her degree means everything to her sometimes i think it means more to her than her life because she's breaking every bone in her body to get it. I wish Lihle was the one with that ambition unlike Yaya she doesn't even have to strive that hard to pay her fees, she has me and there's nothing i wouldn't do for her. I just want her to be independent, she doesn't even have to get a degree if she doesn't want too i can talk to my contacts and get her a job but i don't know how im going to raise that part without her getting all worked up..

In the mist of my thoughts i heard someone clearing their throat, i turned around and it was Lihle's Mother..

Her: Sandile

Me- Sawubona MaCele (greetings MaCele)She looked at Lihle..

Her: kwenzekeni? (what happened)Me: to tell you the truth i don't know

She looked at me sometimes i think that Lihle'sMother doesn't really like me she just tolerates me..

Her: sit down ill make us some tea then we cantalk

Me: you from church and you must be tired, iwill make the tea

She looked at me with a smirk on her faceclearly searching through my soul and myheart..

Her: Okay

I went to the kitchen to boil water..

I searched through the cupboards until i found

everything that i needed to prepare tea. Shewalked in after a while..

Her: konke kuza kahle? (is everything comingalright)

Me- Sengiyaceda (i am almost done)

She walked away with the sound of her heelsmaking noise, i took the tray to the lounge..

Me: Here we goHer: thank you

I put everything down.. Her: How is work going?

Me: It's going fine but i am starting to get boredthinking of expanding my businesses

Her: that's a big stepMe: It is

She took the cup from the table..

Me: I was talking to Lihle earlier on asked if she

has plans since she's done with her learnershipHer: and?

Me: she blew up i don't know for what reason i was just sincerely asking but she said something like i want her to go away so that i can do things behind her back

I cleared my throat..

Me: I think she hasn't completely forgiven me with Buhle

She started starrng through the cup..

Her: Sandile.. My Daughter is broken you broke her and i think you still breaking her

Me: breaking her?

Her: look me in the eye right now and assure me that there's no other woman

I looked down first and then after looked at her..

Her: see that right there? That is what i am

worried about

Me: I love your daughter

Her: but you are in love with someone elseMaCele has always intimidated me..

Her: Sandile what you doing is going to turn outvery bad if you don't love my Daughter enough to be with her only then leave her I shook my head no..

Her: leave her while it's still early before youcause more damage before you completelydamage her and break her to a point of no repair

Me: MaCele...

Her: Yes it's gonna hurt but she will get throughit eventually kuzodlula she won't have a brokenheart forever. Set her free, if you truly love her set her free from the heartache that you causing her

Me: I think i should probably goHer: I am not stopping you
I stood up and walked out because i really didn'tlike what she was
saying..

.
. YAYA

I was in my ward lost in my thoughts at times ide-attach from
reality and think a lot. I was trying to think of a moment in my life
whereby iwas very happy, where i had a big smile because
something good happened but I couldn't find that moment. I
searched deeper and deeper but pain is all i could find. When i was
old enough to know what's wrong and what's right, that's when i
realized that my life was not right. At the tender age of 8 years old i
was already going through Tarvens looking formy Mother at around
00:00am, my older Sister

Thandazo was living with her Father by then and life was very good for her she never even used to visit us she was living very comfortably. I would be going to Taverns looking for her because i knew that when she was drunk she won't find her way back home and those men from around would take advantage. I would have to take all her weight and drag her home, if i don't find her in a Tavern i would have to go and look for her in her boyfriend's place, it would be a bitch if she had a new man that i didn't know about. My Grandmother would have to go to the dumpster to dig through it just to find even that one tomato so that we could have something to eat Pap with because my Mother would've taken her money and went to drink it, that's just a portion of what i have been through. Sandile complains about Lihle to me attimes and i don't think she knows how lucky she is to have someone like him, i don't think Sandile would ever hurt Lihle physically. Do i

want someone to love me? Yes i do, i too deserve to be loved some day. My life cannot end here, i am hoping that after i get my degree my life would start and that i will find someone else who is going to love me instead of making me his punching bag and treat me like garbage. I allow Sandile to treat me like he does because that's the only life that i know, i know people treating me like a doormat and nothing more.....

I only realized that i had been crying when i felt someone wiping my tears, i was surprised to see Sandile standing right next to me. Dr Nkabinde was standing at a far distance, i didn't even hear them making their way in..

I looked at Sandile and he is so damn fine, he is successful. Whatever it is that's bothering him, whatever it is that's turning him into this beast that he is why doesn't he seek help? He has the money to seek professional help for it...

Nkabinde: I will give you some space

Sandile: I will be with you in a moment to settle her bill

Nkabinde: Okay He walked out....

Sandile looked at me the way he looked at me today was different from how he looks at me...

Sandile: How are you? Me: I'll survive

Sandile: Sorry about earlier on

Is he really apologizing?? He was scaring me a bit..

I looked at him and he held my hand.. Sandile: I..

My heart started beating way too fast. Me: what's going on?

Sandile: I love you and I think I wanna be with

you

I just froze that wasn't registering to me..

.

To be continued No edits

[09/27, 22:02] Ron: ¥13YAYA

Ndile and i spent at least 2min all silent and not even looking at each other "I love you and i think i want to be with you" those words brought about silence. I never heard any guy say those words to me before, i never felt this wanted if i may say..

Ndile: I think i should go

He avoided eye contact with me, i don't know if that signaled that he didn't mean those words but he just couldn't make eye contact and seemed a bit edgy..

I feel like i should say something i wanna say something but I don't know what to say, words were denying me right now. He leaned over wanting to kiss me on my forehead but whatever it was in that brain of his stopped him,he didn't proceed with the kiss. I did want him to kiss me i needed to feel different feelings from what i always feel when he is around me, idon't wanna feel scared anymore i don't wannafreeze and be stone cold each time when he touches me. Am i insane? Am i out of my mind?Falling for the same guy that hurts me, the same guy who might wake up tomorrow and seize the breath that makes my body move. AmI insane to be in love with the beast that might devour me one day? am i insane to even think that the baby that i am carrying might just bringus closer? And that we might just be a family? What are you doing Yaya those dreams don't exist for people like you, this man is Lihle's husband he is already taken and his heart beats

only for one woman and it's not me. I stared deep in his eyes as he stared deep into mine, say something Sandile don't make me think those words were just a mistake. You don't mistakenly say "I love you and i wanna be with you to someone" unless you mean it...

Ndile: I'm sorry Yaya I don't know why i said that, i don't know what came over me

He can't say that he cannot reverse the words that his heart already spoke..

Ndile: I will go settle your bill and transfer you some money in your account so you can get a few things when you discharged

My heart was bleeding but why? I cannot be in love with him he is just providing for me and that's all, the plan is to have him provide for me then I should start my life when i have graduated with a different man one who won't beat me every chance that he gets...

I watched him as he walked out, i wish he could

just turn back and come to me doesn't he belong with me?. He should belong with me imean let's be brutally honest if he was in love

with Lihle then why would he find comfort in me?Shouldn't she be enough for him? Shouldn't his love for her make him sane? I was thinking a lot that i was even confusing myself..

After a while Nkabinde walked in with the Detective i have completely forgotten that ihave to give a statement on why i am here..

Detective: Good afternoonMe: afternoon

Detective: I hope today you are ready to talkMe: i guess so

He already had a pen and pad..

Him: do you remember what happened to you?I exhaled..

Me: I was walking back to my flat after taking a

walk in the neighborhood i should've known better than to walk alone at night in the streets of Johannesburg. I never thought that something would happen to me i mean i have walked around a few times and nothing has ever happened to me but i guess with such things you should never be comfortable.

Detective: what happened next? Me: I saw a car passing by

Detective: what car was it?

Me: a white Toyota etios but it passed through and then after like 5min of it passing a red Mazda 3 passed by too

He jotted that down..

Detective: did you get the number plates? Or do you remember them?

Me: let's be honest Detective who goes around memorizing number plates? Especially when it doesn't hit you that you might get kidnapped

Detective: so you saying the Mazda wanted tokidnap you?

Me: actually no it just stopped and some guycame out then it went

Detective: carry on

Me: The guy caught up with me nothing was suspicious with him he looked like a decent guywho just knocked off he was wearing a Tshirt written "Rand water"

Nkabinde chuckled..

Detective: something funny Doc?Nkabinde looked at us..

Nkabinde: No of cause not..sorryDetective: Proceed Miss

Me: He started a conversation with me he wastrying to talk to someone until he reached his destination and at first I didn't want to talk butas time went on i thought why not

Detective: so you guys talked?Me: Yes we did

Detective: what happened next?

Me: We reached a place that was dark and quietthat's when he changed and started grabbing me roughly wanting to sleep with me

Detective: right there in that dark place?

Me: Yes it was a struggle he ended up beatingme

Detective: and?I sighed..

Me: that's all i remember until i woke up hereWe waited for him to finish writing..

Detective: I hear your Story Miss..Me: Yaya.. Call me Yaya

Detective: I hear your story Yaya but you were tested and there's no sign that you were sexual

assaultedMe: Ohw

Detective: If that guy wanted to rape you i thinkhe would've done it after beating you

Me: I wouldn't know Detective because imust've blacked out

Detective: Miss.. I mean Yaya i know your typein my line of work i have came across a lot of domestic abuse relationships

Me: i am sorry domestic what?

Detective: are you protecting your boyfriend?Me: I don't even have one

Detective: do you know how you ended uphere?

Me: No

He looked at Nkabinde and i looked at him too,hoping that he doesn't say anything..

Nkabinde: ummmm she was found abandoned

at the parking lot left for dead

Detective: Did the security see anything? Nkabinde: I think you must ask them The Detective looked at me..

Detective: thank you for your time Yaya we will investigate your case and please write a statement for us then put your contact details i will come and get the statement tomorrow morning incase you come to your senses and wanna change what you have just told me now

Me: Why would i wanna change the truth?

Detective: If you sticking to your story then i will still come to get the statement from you tomorrow morning

Me: Okay

He looked at Nkabinde.. Detective: Thank you Doc Nkabinde: you welcome

They walked out with Nkabinde looking at me..

Me: He is the father of my baby what do you want me to do? Send him to jail?

.

. LIHLE

I was at the kitchen making myself something to eat i was feeling a bit better after taking that nap, i really needed to escape reality for a moment. I didn't mean to just blow up on Sandile like that but I felt like he didn't care, how can he raise such a topic when we have just lost our baby? How he acted was without a doubt insensitive. My Mother walked in from her bedroom...

Mom: HlehleMe: Ma

She went to the fridge..

Me: i am making something to eat would youlike some?

Mom: No thank you i am about to cookMe: okay

Mom: Sandile was here

Me: He picked me up from the hospital

She got the green peppers and then closed thefridge..

Mom: He said you got angry when he asked what you wanna do with your life from hereon

I kept quiet..

Mom: do you wanna be a housewife?I shrugged my shoulders..

Mom: You might be someone's "wife" but this isstill my house, you still my child and you don't shrug your shoulders when i talk to you

Me: Sorry

Mom: What is wrong with you? Do you wannabe a housewife for the rest of your life?

I ignored her..

Mom: There's nothing wrong with being a housewife but not all men are the same and Sandile is definitely not the man who wants a housewife

I still ignored her..

Mom: get your act together Lihle! If you carry on like this you are going to lose him to another woman!

That made me livid i banged the plate against the kitchen counter and it broke..

Mom: Please break my dishes just because you don't wanna hear the truth

Me: The truth is that he loves me and he put a ring on it
I showed her the ring and she laughed..

Me: maybe i should move out because we clearly no longer seeing eye to eye

She stopped cutting the peppers..

Me: I will move in with Sandile for a while

Mom: If you say so Lihle you think you a grown woman now and as a grown woman myself, i cannot reprimand another grown woman I didn't expect that, i expected a long speech. I walked up to my bedroom to pack my things..

.

To be continued [09/27, 22:02] Ron: ¥14LIHLE

There is no shame in loving a Person, there is no sin in loving a Person. I didn't wake up one day and chose to love Sandile as much as i do but it happened, and it happened for a reason. I hope my moving out of home will show my

Mother that i am growing up and it's no sin to go out and find myself, i have to grow up and i won't be able to that under my Mother's wing. I got to Sandile's place his Mother was in the kitchen cooking while humming, something was really smelling nice. MaKhumalo she is a very clean person, the yard was clean and I saw curtains hanging outside on the washing line. I love this woman because she loves me and accepted me she's not one of those Mother in laws who will make you kiss the ground before accepting you, Sandile's Mother is a sweetheart. I wonder if she even gets angry. I knocked at an already open door, she turned around and saw me.

MaKhumalo: Haaaa!!! Lihle

She closed the pot and met me halfway, she hugged me.

MaKhumalo: I am so happy to see you I smiled at her..

She put her hands on my cheeks.

MaKhumalo: I am so sorry about what happened to you

I saw tears building up in her eyes. I held her hands..

Me: I will be fine Ma

She let go of me and took out a tissue from the pocket of her dress and wiped her tears..

MaKhumalo: Sit down i will make us some tea

I sat down and put my bag on top of the table, she looked at the bag..

Me: Ma can we talk?

She came and sat down across me.. MaKhumalo: Is everything okay at home? Me: Everything is fine

MaKhumalo: Okay that's good

Me: I have decided to move out from home for

a couple of days

MaKhumalo: I thought you said things are okay at home

Me: They are i just wanted to spend some time with Sandile you know since everything that's happened

She nodded..

MaKhumalo: He has been talking about you moving in

Me: so you don't mind?

MaKhumalo: Are you crazy? I would love to have you around

I smiled..

MaKhumalo: Let me check my pots Me: Can i help you with something?

MaKhumalo: You can get the curtains and put them back if angeke uzithunuke (if you won't cause pain to yourself)

Me: I won't

She smiled and i stood up to go and get thecurtains..

.

. YAYA

I was happy when Nkabinde told me that Tomorrow i will be going home and that Sandilehas paid my hospital bill, i cannot wait to go back to my life..

Nkabinde: You still have to write the statementtomorrow morning before you leave

Me: Okay

He looked at me and his look was clearlyjudging me..

Me: I am still going to stick to my storyNkabinde: I didn't say anything

Me: You didn't have too

Nkabinde: anymore pain?Me: not that much

Nkabinde: I will give you pain killers tomorrowwhen you leave.

Please take it easy your stitches are still fresh

I nodded..

We heard a knock at the door, it was Candiceshe was holding a KFC package..

Nkabinde: I will see you tomorrow morningMe: okay

He walked out and Candice walked in..Her: This is your lunch and dinner

Me: what is it?

Her: Streetwise two, a twister and a burger withchips. I also got you a cool drink

I sat up straight as she fixed the pillows forme..

Me: thank you

Candice: Is it going to be fine? Since you eating for two?

Me: I will be fine

Candice: Wednesday night big Daddy is having his business associates come over for lunch at his place wanna tag along?

Me: i hope i will be feeling better by then i cannot miss such a get together

Candice: I was hoping that you would say that i cannot show up alone it gets boring when he starts talking about business with his people and i am just sitting there

Me: I can imagine

Candice: want something to eat? Me: maybe the streetwise
She passed me the food..

Me: thank you.. Sandile ended up paying the bill

Candice: That's nice.. So are you going to tell him about the pregnancy?

Me: I don't know.. I don't even know if i wanna keep the baby or not

Candice: you have a lot of decisions to make Me: I know

.

. NDILE

I am very much interested in expanding my businesses i wanna quit my job and have my own businesses. I have been talking with Big Daddy he is a very successful and well known businessman and he was fascinated by how my restaurant is taking off he told me that i have potential and he invited me to his house Wednesday night because he is meeting up with his business associates, he thinks i can get good contacts from there. After seeing Yaya at

the hospital I drove to my Uncle's place to talk to him, I am caught between two women that I love very much and I don't think I can choose one over the other at the same time I don't want to hurt Lihle with Yaya. It's a very messed up situation with Yaya she was just supposed to be my stress reliever but now I am catching feelings for her and I don't know what to do..

My Uncle was happy to see me we took chairs and sat outside while drinking beer.

Uncle: You never come to visit me so what do I owe this visit?

Me: Can't I just see my Uncle?

Uncle: ungazo dlala ngami wena (don't play with me)

Me: eish Malume I am in a tight situation Uncle- khuluma nami (talk to me)

Me: The family knows Lihle as the only woman in my life

Uncle- Kudala vele uzwana nayo lentombazananoma uNyoko adelela (it's been a while since you and her have been dating even though her Mother is disrespectful)

Me: Ya but she's not the only one

Uncle: angisakutholi kahle (i am not understanding)

Me: there's another woman in the picture malume her name is Yaya i have been seeing her on the side for a while now

Uncle- Umakhwapheni? (side chick)

Me: in the beginning she was but now i think I am falling in love with her

Uncle: How can you fall for a side chick? You supposed to relieve your stress with her when Lihle gives you a headache

Me: I know Malume and i don't know how this happened

He picked up the bottle and drank from it..

Uncle: I am not going to judge you because nami when i moved from Kzn to work here i leftmy wife and my kids eKzn i started an affair with this other woman and..

Me: you ended up marrying her too

Uncle: I couldn't keep up with the affair i knewhow much my wife would be hurt

Me: Malume it's different with you. Your wife accepted your mistress because culture forcedher too she is very obidient and allowed for you to marry your mistress

Uncle: and they get along very well

Me: Malume i don't see Lihle accepting YayaUncle: how is Yaya?

Me: she is good she is in varsity studying socialwork, she is doing her second year

Uncle: she sounds ambitiousMe: she is

Uncle: It's a balance uLihle doesn't want to do anything she will be a housewife then uYaya lowakhona she can be a wife that goes to work every morning

Me: I don't know Malume

Uncle: Sandile you like a Son to me it's time you put your foot down! uLihle doesn't have to like uYaya but she will have to accept her. Look you can marry uLihle white wedding and everything then you can marry uYaya traditionally

I exhaled..

Uncle: You are the man! Lihle has to accept uYaya whether she likes it or not. It's either that or continue having an affair nalo Yaya and see how it's going to ruin things

.

To be continued [09/27, 22:03] Ron: ¥15LIHLE

Later on MaKhumalo dished up for the two of us and we sat in the lounge eating while watching TV, Sandile was not around and Karabo was still at work. It was around 19:00 i even cleaned the outside room after helping MaKhumalo with putting the curtains back after they had dried.

I understand Sandile not being around maybe he is still upset about how i blew up on him earlier on, i really didn't mean to act that way i don't know what came over me. I heard the kitchen door opening and closing, i really hoped that it was him but I was disappointed when Karabo walked into the lounge after a few seconds.

Her: LihleMe: Hey

Her: It's good to see youMe: good to see you too

Her: How are you?

Me: I am holding in thereHer: That's good

MaKhumalo: Was it Sakhile who dropped you off?

Her: Yes

MaKhumalo: He doesn't come in to greet anymore?

Her: With Sandile being around it's going to be world war III

Me: He has to accept that you growing upHer: we both know he would never

Me: I will dish up for you

Her: No thank you dali my boyfriend bought me something to eat

Me: Okay

Her: I'll just go and bath

She walked to her bedroom..

MaKhumalo: are you going to be full Lihle?Me: Yes Ma

MaKhumalo: Phela you girls and dieting

Me: I am not on a diet I'm just not that hungry

I took my phone and was about to send Sandilea text message when I heard a car pull up..

MaKhumalo: That must be himMe: I wonder where he was

MaKhumalo: I am sure he went to see his friends Phela he doesn't come here that much

I continued eating..

I thought that maybe he would come in but hedidn't..

Me: let me go and check him outside i will alsodish up for him

MaKhumalo: Okay

I stood up and went to wash my hand then dished up for him, i went outside and he had went straight to his room than coming inside the house.

I walked in..Me: Hi

He turned and looked at me shocked that i was in my Pajamas.

Me: Ngikuphakele (i have dished up for you)

His eyes were a bit red and disoriented he was holding his pills.

Him: ufunani la ebusuku so (what are you doing here so late)

He was drunk..

Me: I came earlier i decided that I should come and spend some time with you

He sat down on the bed and took off his sneakers..

Him: why?

Me: i don't understand

Him: wena utefa so ngizosho igama eli one bese nje uzoba no drama (you are a cry baby one word that im going to say to you is going to make you dramatic)

I went and put the plate on the dressing table..

Him: uyadelela Lihle! (you are disrespectful) what you did earlier you will never do again uyangizwa? (do you hear me)

Okay i am not used to him being like this, he has never spoken to me in such a manner..

Him: You need to understand that i am the man in this relationship you need to.. You need to address me with respect!

I turned and looked at him.. Me: You are drunk

Him: tell me Lihle what exactly goes through

your mind? La ekhanda lakho kwenzakalani?

He tried opening the bottle of pills but he was struggling..

Me: let me help you

Him: i can open a bottle of pills it's not rocket science

He was really struggling..

Me: Sandile ithi ngikuncede (Sandile let me help you)

I tried getting the pills from him but he pushed me and i fell..

Him: Sometimes uvele ung'dine straight!(sometimes you disgust me)

I just had an operation and now he is being violent with me what has gotten into him? I slowly stood up as i felt pain were i had been operated on.. He threw his sneaker at me.

Him: That's why you been stuck with me for 10

years! Because you are so stupid that no guy will ever love you!
I went and sat on the other side of the bed just close to the
headboard.

Him: There's women who have dreams out there but you! the only
thing you looking forward too is getting married and having kids!
What nonsense is that?

This cannot be happening he cannot be saying such things to me, it's
not right..

Him: If you don't change i will be forced to take another wife
He didn't just say that!

He finally opened the bottle of pills but carelessly that they were
scattered all over..

He threw the container on the floor..

Him: Fok! Now i am stupid like you, i cannot even do something so
simple

Can this be not him, can it be the bipolar talking..There was silence for a while and i realized that he has passed out on the bed..

.

. YAYA

Candice fetched me in the morning i was so happy to be out i didn't even leave a statement for the Detective he can just let the case go. The first thing i did when I got to my flat was to get my phone and go through it i had a bank notification Yesterday Sandile had transferred R7 000 to my account, and i had a couple of missed calls and call backs from my Mother. I know she is going to swear at me but i called her anyway..

Ma: uyinja! Bloody mgodoyi!!! Yey you are more than evil

Me: Ma calm down

Ma: Calm down my left foot! uGogo almost died! You promised money but never sent sengize ngikhuluma isilungu ngingasazi (i am now speaking English while i don't know it)

Me: I was at the hospital

Ma: unamanga ubalekile (you are lying you ranaway)

Me: Ma i will send you R1 500 later on today She kept quiet..

Me: Ma??

Ma: asazi sizobona (we don't know, we will see)

Me: I am on my way to Shoprite right now ke to show i am not playing with you

Ma: Mawusho (whatever you say) Me: i will call you

I hung up and looked at Candice.

Me: can you drive me to the ATM and then

Shoprite?

Candice: You supposed to be resting

Me: Please my Mother will never give me peace

Candice: we will pass by at the boutique to getdresses for tomorrow night

Me: i don't know if i will make itCandice: why?

Me: I didn't think the operation would hurt thisbad if i don't take it easy the stitches might come off

She exhaled.. Me: I am sorry

Candice: But you can go to Shoprite

Me: I have no choice my Mother will never give me peace

Candice: There's nothing that i don't do for you iam just asking you for this small favour you willbe sitting down the whole time

I sighed..

Me: Fine then ill come along Candice: thank you

Me: but you going to buy the dress for me Candice: Yeah Yeah whatever

.

. LIHLE

I woke up the following morning and Sandile wasn't next to me he must've went to work. I rose up from the pillow and looked around my eyes felt swollen, i remembered that i had cried myself to sleep last night after the hurtful words that Sandile said to me..

I got out of bed and went to the main house from the kitchen i heard my Mother's voice, what is she doing here? I made my way to the Lounge and she was sitting with MaKhumalo..

MaKhumalo: sowuvukile (you are awake)I greeted them..

MaKhumalo: hlala phantsi (sit down)

I sat down, my Mother was looking at me iwonder what she has up her sleeve..

.

To be continued [09/27, 22:04] Ron: ¥16LIHLE

MaKhumalo: MaCele should i move and giveyou some space with your Daughter?

Mom: Just 5min nje

MaKhumalo stood up and walked out, i lookeddown i couldn't face my Mother. I feel like i ama disappointment to her and half of what she said about Sandile is turning out to be true.

Yesterday i disrespected her maybe that's whyall of this is happening, i moved out of home

not in the right manner.. Mom- Kunjani? (how are you)Me- Ngiyaphila (i am well) Awkward silence..

Mom- Lihle you are the only child that i have the only thing that reminds me of the love that existed between me and your Father. The Last thing I want is tension between us, angifuni sixabane Hlehle (i don't want us to fight)

Me: Nami Ma (me too)

Mom: uMaKhumalo has agreed that she will talk to Sandile and Sandile's Uncle so that we can have the Lobola negotiations this coming Saturday again

I played with my ring..

Mom: I am accepting Lihle i am accepting that you love him. I am accepting that you wanna be with him, your happiness comes first to me. No one stood between me and your Father it would

be selfish of me to stand between you and himngoba umyathanda
Hlehle (you love him Hlehle)

Tears started filling my eyes..

Mom- uSandile maybe i might have misjudged him it seems like you
have helped him to beathis mental illness

I wiped my tears..

Mom: I know that if i push and be against this imight lose you
forever and I don't want that

He voice started being shaky..

Mom: I lost my husband already and i don'twanna lose you too

Me: You not going to lose me

I looked at her and she was wiping her tears..Mom: Just promise me
two things

Me: Yes?

Mom: You don't wanna go to school it's okay

but at least find a job don't be dependant on him because that's when he is going to mistreat you and control you. He will think he has power over you and he will start owning you. It doesn't matter what kind of a job it is but as long as month end you get your own salary that's all that matters

Me: I promise

Mom: and one last thing Me: Yes?

Mom: Bipolar is very dangerous especially when it's uncontrolled Sandile mentally he is disturbed because of what he went through as a child. I know Lihle you put him in a high pedestal but if he could mistreat you even once come back home i don't wanna fetch you in a coffin

I nodded repeatedly.. Me: I promise

She stood up..

Mom: know that i am very proud of the woman that you have become i forgot you no longer 3years old

I chuckled. I stood up too..She came to hug me..

Mom: I love you Me: I love you too

Mom: take care of yourselfShe broke the hug..

Me: uhmm MaMom: Yes?

Me: can i come back home just until the negotiations are done?

She smiled...

Mom: Of cause it's still your homeMe: I will get my bag

Mom: you wanna come back now? I nodded..

Mom: uMaKhumalo was telling me that she has prepared breakfast for you two

Me: I wanna come home She looked at me..

Mom: Hlehle are you alright? Tears fell..

Mom: Langelihle Cele did Sandile do something?

Her facial expression changed..

I didn't know if i should tell the truth or not..

.

. YAYA

Just from my place to Shoprite it was dreadful though i walked a small distance because we

used Candice's car but the pain that arose from where i had been operated was unbearable, Candice even saw that i won't cope tonight because there's going to be a lot of standing up then sitting down. There's going to be a lot of hugging too and i don't think i am up for that..

She put another pillow behind me..Candice: How is that?

Me: better

Candice: I'll get you painkillers

My breathing was abnormal, everytime when i draw in my breath the pain would get more intense..

Candice walked back in with a glass of water and pain killers..

Me: Thank you

I drank while she looked at me..

Candice: are you sure we shouldn't go back to

the Dr?

Me: I am fine

She got in bed next to me..Candice: move in with me Me: Why?

Candice: Your roommate is hardly around and idon't like you being alone

Me: But i won't pay rentCandice: I know that

My phone started vibrating she passed it to me..It was my Mother..

Me: Ma

Ma: Ngiyitholile imali Yaya (i received themoney)

Me: I hope you will use it wiselyMa: You help us a lot Dankie Me:

It's the least i can do

Ma: kuyakanjani ngawe? (how is it going with you)

I don't know what came over me but i just blurted it out that im pregnant.

Me: Ma i am pregnant

She kept quiet for a while..Me: Ma

Ma: Yaya please ungafani nodade wenu (don't be like your sister)

Me: my boyfriend is working and present in my life

Ma: does he know?Me: not yet

Ma: uzolobola? (is he going to pay the dowry)Me: Ma!!

Ma: Yini he is working Me: I don't know about it

Ma: Eyy Yaya at least be different from us our Family is a joke
mntanam' at least be different get married noma akulobole nange
R2000 just be different bring a change here

It was my first time hearing my Mother talk like this..

Me: I have to go

Ma: Okay Phela wena no hubby you must fetch me i wanna see
where you live

Me: one day Ma: bye sisi Me: Bye Ma

I hung and thought for a while.. Candice: what is it?

Me: i have to tell Sandile that i am pregnant Candice: Are you
keeping the baby?

I nodded..

Me: Maybe he will change, maybe we can be a family

She laughed..

Candice: that's a joke right? I faked a smile..

Me: Yeah it is

Candice: You got me right there for a second

But it wasn't a joke what if.. Just what if he changes?

.

To be continued

Apologies if it's short i have other pages to type too before everyone falls asleep [OBJ]

[09/27, 22:04] Ron: ¥17LIHLE

I didn't tell my Mother what really happened the last thing i want is for her to hate Sandile, i just

told her that we had a fight and it really affected me. Fighting with your boyfriend/Fiancé/Husband is never a nice feeling. I still don't understand why relationship fights hurt so much, but then again fighting someone whom you hold dear to you can put a strain in your heart. My Mother and I were doing home prepared Pies, she was making me laugh with all the stories that she was telling me especially her and my Dad. She really got me off my bad mood and thinking about Sandile. We heard a knock at the door..

Mom- I wonder who that is Me- I'll go and check

I wash my hands in the sink and then went to open, it was Nomsa..

Me: Hey you didn't go to work today? Her: Day off

She made her way in..

Nomsa: Afternoon Ma

Mom: Afternoon Nomsa.. Today you didn't go to work?

Nomsa: I am off

Mom: join us we making Mince pies just check the mince in the pot while Lihle and i finish off the pastry

Nomsa: It's coming out good i like that you added mixed Veges
She closed the pot..

Mom: Glad that you here i am sure you won't mind taking over

Nomsa: I am used to this i do a lot of baking at work

Mom: I have to go Me: where too?

Mom: I have to go and give Buhle's Mom the money for our society
stokvel, Bab'Mshengu

passed on yesterday Nomsa: I heard shame

Mom: You girls can continue from here won'tyou?

Nomsa: Yes we will

She walked to her bedroom..

Nomsa came to help with the pastry.Nomsa: How is the operation?

Me: It has it's days sometimes it's painfulsometimes it's fine

Nomsa: How are you and Sandile?Me: we are fine

Nomsa: Glad to hear thatMe: can i ask?

Nomsa: Yes?

Me: don't you guys have open vacancies atPnp?

Nomsa: Hmmmm i will ask.. Why?

Me: I want a job since registrations are closedNomsa: I will check

Me: Thank you

Nomsa: have you thought about..

She checked if my Mother is not coming..

Nomsa: Don't you wanna know if Sandile ishaving an affair?

Me: You have soo much faith in this womanNomsa: I do.. So are you in?

I looked at her for a while and then nodded..Me: I am

My Mother showed up and hung the Apron inthe chair..

Mom: I am going i will be backMe: Okay Ma

She walked out

Nomsa: Tomorrow morning?Me: Tomorrow morning

Nomsa: R150 for consultation I'll give you R50Me: I do have R100

Nomsa: I will come and get you

Do i really wanna know if Sandile is having an affair??

.

. YAYA

Since i sent Sandile a text message that i am pregnant he hasn't replied, i sent him about an hour ago unless he is at work. I was very nervous how is he going to act? Did i just fuckup my future? Will he still wanna be with me after this? What if he stops paying my fees?

I didn't know what to think because he is very unpredictable..

Candice left 30min ago saying she has to prepare for the dinner tonight and I went to the kitchen make myself something to eat. I hope my Mother didn't just mess my future up, i probably shouldn't have told Sandile. I should've left him and had silently had an abortion...

The door opened and my roommate walked in with her bag..

Her: Hey

This month she didn't pay her share of the rent Sandile had to pay the full rent which is R4000 so we don't get evicted..

Me: You back

Her: Yes i am.. Let me take my bag to the bedroom

Candice is right i must move in with her, i cannot be used financially by another girl who has a pussy like me and fails to use it..

.

. NDILE

I was still shocked by the text message that Yaya sent me saying that she's pregnant, i had to excuse myself from the workplace and go outside to have a smoke and think about what's happening. I looked at my hands and they were dirty, dealing with engines that work on diesel is no fun.. I was working on a dumb truck, they should've at least cleaned it before bringing it here. That's one of the things i hate about my job i go through all this shit and Lihle just wants to use my money while she's sitting at home and doing nothing after i work like a dog to provide for her, at least Yaya she has ambition she is using my money to better herself..

I called my Uncle and told him what's happening while I was still on my smoking break..

Uncle: Tell me uthanda bani kakhulu lo Lihle noma uYaya? (who do you love the most Lihle

or Yaya) Me: Lihle

I love Lihle, unlike Yaya she has been there forme. Yaya only found me when i have already made it in Life but Lihle was here when i was still broke and everything. She knows about mybipolar, what i went through as a child and she was the only girl to ever agreed in dating me while I was broke..

Uncle: Well you cannot just set Yaya asideespecially since she's carrying your baby

Me: what you suggest i do?

Uncle: Your Mother told me about the Lobola negotiations still proceeding this weekend so mina i say asilobole uLihle futhi uyazi uMaCeleuyahlanya (Pay Lobola for Lihle plus you knowher Mother is crazy)

Me: and then?

Uncle: Then after marry her white wedding after

that reveal that you have Yaya on the side and she's pregnant

Me: Malume (uncle)

Uncle: Stop being soft! Khumalo men are not controlled by women! Beat this Lihle until she accepts Yaya if you have too i don't care kodwado don't be controlled by a woman!! You think me and your Father we were controlled by women? The reason why your Father abused your Mother is because she didn't wanna accept your Father's mistress she didn't want your Father to marry another woman! She didn't wanna accept that Khumalo men practice polygamy she didn't wanna respect our culture!!

.

To be continued [09/27, 22:05] Ron: ¥18YAYA

Ndile showed up later on that day he looked very flashy wearing an expensive suit i wonder what the occasion is. He walked in leaving the scent of his cologne to fill the atmosphere..

I closed the door and just stood there waiting for him to turn around, he did and then put his hands in his pockets..

Him: Hey
Me: Hi

The only thing that stands between this fool and his looks is the beast that resides deep in him.

Me: You look lovely

Him: I have a meeting somewhere
Me: That sounds interesting

Him: It is im trying to expand my businesses
Me: Something to drink?

Him: a glass of water

I went to get him a glass of water..He came into the kitchen..

Him: Where you serious with that text?I gave him the glass of water..

Him: Yes i am pregnant think a month pregnant

Him: Wow i don't even recall the last time wehad unprotected sex

Me: Me too

He took a sip...

Him: What have you decided? Do you want tokeep the baby?

Me: Do you want me to keep the baby?He chuckled and i did too..

Him: I always thought Lihle was going to giveme a baby

Me: How is she holding up?

Him: she's getting there.. How are you feeling?

I went and sat down he followed me..Me: I am getting there

Him: I am glad to hear that

He looked like he had something on his mind..Me: Something on your mind?

Him: How do you feel about polygamy?Me: Never really given it a thought

Him: I found out lately that my Father's familypractices it

Me: and how do you feel about it?

Him: How would you feel being my secondwife?

I laughed and looked at him..Me: wait you serious?

Him: I am not making you one because you pregnant but because i really want stability withyou too

Me: What has Lihle said about that?Him: She doesn't know

Me: I don't think she's going to take in lightly tothis

Him: She really doesn't have a say

Me: I don't wanna be dealing with her.. Is shecrazy?

Him: at times

Me: I'm pregnant i can't be fightingHim: just think about it

Me: Well i have always been your second best so it really doesn't affect me the only thing thataffects me is basically the whole concept of Marriage i have never given marriage any thought

Him: I understand it's a big step for youMe: I'll think about it

He looked at his watch..

Him: I have to go
Me: Okay

He leaned over and kissed me..
Him: I will call you tomorrow
Me: Okay

For a change Sandile and i sat down and spoke without him beating me up or swearing, he was civil. I didn't even think he could be..

.

. LIHLE

Nomsa came to my house to fetch me we had decided while we were baking pies earlier today that we will go and see this woman tonight because tomorrow she knocks off late at 20:00. I wasn't really all for it but Nomsa has faith in this woman and i will have to trust her, i had lied to my Mother that we going to Nomsa's place

and that she is going to teach me a new recipe...

At least it was a bit dark most people were indoors over the fact that it was cold, i cannot afford to have anyone see me walking inside that Woman's place..

We checked all around and when we were sure that no one was seeing us we walked in. I was expecting to find her consulting room full of traditional things but she only had red and white candles, she was also wearing pure white. A white long dress, and a white doek..

She looked like she was in her late 30s. She put down a grass mat and we went to sit on it, she brought along an incense and burned it..

She didn't have any bones to throw.

She sat down and started clapping her hands and said clan names first calling on her Ancestors to help her reveal what is hidden. She then looked at us..

Her: What are your names?She seemed very sweet..

Nomsa: NomsaMe: Lihle

Her: MaNgubo.. Who is here for theconsultation?

Me: Umm it's me

Her: Ngakusiza ngani? (how can i help you)

Me: i need to know if my Fiancé is seeingsomeone else

Her: are you sure you wanna know that?I nodded..

She stood up and went to get something thatlooked like an ointment..

Him: igcobe ezandleni (apply it on your hands)I opened and applied it on my hands.

It had a strong and so not pleasant smell..

Her: Give me your hands I gave her my hands..

Her: close your eyes I closed my eyes..

Nothing happened for two minutes, she started talking in a language that i didn't understand..

Her: Hartu non nahi duen (take her to where she wants)

After she said that i was immediately taken to Sandile's house in the bedroom. I saw a very disturbing scene. He was sitting on the bed with some girl on him they were naked and kissing, he was running his hands all over her. From his face i could see that he really wanted her, he was enjoying her. I couldn't see the girl's face her weave was getting in the way..

I opened my eyes and got my hands from her grip..

Nomsa: Are you okay?

I stood up.. Me: I wanna goNomsa: Lihle?

MaNgubo: what did you see? Me: trust me i have seen enough!

I put on my shoes then walked up to the door..

ManNgubo: Remember she can be your doom,he is hung up on her
I should have never came here!!

.

. NDILE

Big Daddy's house was just out of this world, this man has made it
big for himself and i wouldn't mind rubbing shoulders with him. I
was surprised to see Candice i didn't think sheknew Big Daddy..

We were gathered across the table eating dinner just associating with everyone that was there, I need a contact that's gonna be able to help me out with expanding my businesses. I have a child on the way now and two women who will be dependant on me..

.

To be continued [09/27, 22:05] Ron: ¥19NDILE

Big Daddy and I excused ourselves after the dinner and went to his study to talk over a glass of whiskey and some cigars, it's sad on my side that i couldn't get even one contact that was interested in my businesses..

Big D: Thank you for honouring my invitation by gracing me with your presence tonight

Me: I couldn't turn down such a high class invitation

Big D: I was hoping that no contact was gonna approach you because i am interested in helping you to expand your businesses That was shocking i mean Big Daddy is rich why would he be interested in my businesses that are clearly small to him..

Big D: I have businesses all around

Me: I know and i must say that i am very inspired by you

Big D: what is it that you do again? Your Profession?

Me: I am a Diesel Mechanic Big D: fascinating job

Me: I wanna quit it though and focus strictly on businesses

Big D: If i go into business with you i don't want you to quit your job

Me: I don't understand

He leaned forward..

Big D: The businesses that i run want you on the down low

Me: what type of businesses do you run? Big D: Can i trust you?

Me: Yes

He stood up and got some documents, he tossed them across the table to me..

Big D: I will bring in my business to your business and from my business you will get a 30% share of the profit

Me: What is your business? He lit up the cigar..

Big D: You said i can trust you He passed me the pen..

Big D: The cops are on me now they keep an eye on my businesses i need a place where i can Auction the girls to the highest bidders and

then provide them with a place to pleasure themselves for that night your club comes off as a perfect place

Me: That sounds a bit dangerous

Big D: 30% we do that twice a week and the club has to be closed during all those times that we going to be using it. Your club is underground it cannot be easily tailed, if you happy with what I am saying you can sign

Sounds like a good way to make extra money more especially with all the responsibilities that i am facing now..

.

. YAYA

The following morning i prepared myself for school i cannot keep on missing classes and fail it will make Sandile think that i am wasting his money. I thought about what he said and

quite frankly i don't know how to respond to it, i have always been his second best so being his second wife doesn't really scare me. The only thing that gets to me is the fact that i will be grounded, i will have a curfew there's things i can no longer do anymore partying being one..

Even though it comes with its disadvantages but it also comes with advantages, i will be getting more money and get more things that i want..

The door opened and Candice walked in, i was in the kitchen making myself something to eat..

Candice: Hey babe Me: Hey

Candice: are you ready? Me: Yes

Candice always comes through for me with anything, i cannot call Candice for help and she will never decline...

Candice: So guess who i saw Last night?Me: Who?

Candice: Sandile he was at Big Daddy'sbusiness dinner

Me: are you serious?

Candice: Yeap looks like your Man is thinking ofexpanding

Me: Wow that means more money for me

Candice: You can finally afford to buy designershoes and bags, you will stop borrowing mine

Me: No wonder why he texted me this morningand said he is sick he won't be going to work

Candice: Hangover from all the whiskey that hehad been drinking last night

My flatmate showed up from her bedroom sheonly greeted and walked out..

Candice: and that?

Me: You don't wanna know i just need to move

in with you

Candice: Let's go or you will be late I took my bag and we went..

.

. LIHLE

The most heartbreaking thing is letting go of a long relationship 10 years with Sandile, i have invested my heart, my soul, my whole life with him. Will i survive without him? How do I move on? He is all i have known for 10 years how do I begin to pick up the pieces and move on when my heart will never stop bleeding? Why does love have to hurt this much? I love him why does he have to keep on doing this to me! I believe MaNgubo because Sandile once hinted about a woman when we were fighting, i have forgiven him with Buhle but now i am done i am seriously done. Yes it's going to be painful but

it'll all get better in time..

I went to his house that morning when i had realized that he didn't go to work, i just wannagive him his ring back and be done..

I knocked at his door a couple of times before he opened, seems like i had disturbed him fromhis sleep..

Him: Hlehle He moved.. Him: Come in

I walked in and he closed the door..Him: Ekuseni so? (so early)

He went and sat down on his bed..

I was broken, i was so broken that i couldn'trestrain my tears..

Him: What's wrong?

I looked at him with eyes full of tears..

Me: I know you cheating on me i know there'sanother woman

Him: Ini? (what)

Me: I love you Sandile but i can't.. I cannot keepon doing this anymore i am sorry

Him: what are you talking about?

Me: I am just here to tell you that it's overI took off the ring..

Him: Are you seeing someone else?Me: What?

Him: You are standing there accusing me ofcheating while i am not! Are you using that statement to break up with me because you seeing someone else?

Me: I am not seeing anyone

Him: Then you wouldn't be doing this

Me: Sandile seriously i cannot anymore i amtired of doing this with you

Him: No you not tired I was a bit confused..

Him: You are my fiancé like it or not we going to get married yezwa? (do you hear)

He stood up and made his way to me..

Him: Don't make yourself a laughing stock! Buhle and all the girls from around here are going to laugh at you that you couldn't keep your man! Do you think after 10 years it will be easy to start over? To love someone else? Who is even going to love you when you this stupid? Uneducated piece of trash! Can't even get a simple college qualification!

I tried walking away but he grabbed my arm and pinned me against the wall...

Him: You don't get to pull out baby face, you stuck with me you going to leave me in a coffin and that is a promise! From now on its either my way or no way at all! I am no longer going to

beg you and all that shit, from now on i make the rules!!!

He let go of me..

Him: Now i need some morning glory get on that bed before i make you

I looked at him and i saw this monster, a beast, the devil himself..

He grabbed me by my hair and threw me in bed..

Me: Sandile please my operation hasn't healed

He locked the door and came to me, he pulled down my skirt..

Me: Sandile please stop (crying)

He tore my underwear then opened my legswide..

Him: Eyy you making noise and it's turning me off!!! Shut the fuck up and take it like a big girl!! She has been taking it all for you now it's your

turn!!

He took off his briefs i am even surprised that he had an erection in such circumstances..

He forced his way in, the more he forced his way in the more painful it was. He literally slapped me across my face...

Him: You are going to wet my dick do we understand each other?

You are going to give me those juices

He put his hands on my throat and strangled me as he pressed more deeper.. This was a nightmare

.

[09/27, 22:06] Ron: BROKEN

¥20

LIHLE

Looking at the blood stains on the duvet the bite marks he left on my body, my ripped tshirt

and underwear, and the burning sensation he left in the most sacred part of my body. Our womanhood should never be violated, it's the part connected to our soul that extends to the heart. I cannot possibly lay out how i was feeling because no word can describe what washappening deep inside, he killed me he truly killed me. The words that couldn't leave my mind where "All along she has been taking it in for you, now it's your turn" I couldn't remember the exact way that he put them but neverthelessi remembered them. I heard the door closing myheart jumped a little, he was back from bathing but even the fresh scent of his shower gel cannot wash away the evil that resides in him.

He stood there and looked at me..

Him: Lihle no matter how much you think aboutit, it will never change. It happened and now youknow the true me

I was still looking down hoping that he was going to say something different, something

that will rewind what just happened and make it seem like it's a big nightmare that i woke up from..

He touched me and i cringed..

Him: I know you scared and i know that you are confused but baby i am not always like this, you know i love you and you know that i can never hurt you on purpose. I don't want what happened to affect our love, our relationship. 10 years Lihle cannot go down the drain, i need you because believe it or not but you are my sanity.

You are the only girl that ever loved me and was always there for me through thick and thin, and then hearing you saying that you wanna leave me i panicked. I lost it and i didn't know how to react, i am sorry

Tears fell and he put his hand around my shoulders then pulled me closer to him..

Him: It's me Nana.. It's still me

I just cried i needed to let it all out i was

confused i didn't know what to think, it was more as if like i had shifted from reality at that moment.

.

. YAYA

I was at the library gathering information for one of my assignments, coming back to school i was welcomed by two assignments and one of them was due Monday so i have to work on it. I take my school work seriously, i can play around with anything just not my school work because my degree means more to me than anything else. My phone vibrated and it was a call back from my sister, i excused myself from my study group and went outside to call her. My Sister moved in with us when her Father married another woman and that woman didn't like my Sister, so she was forced to come back home. That affected her, she was used to a

glamour life now having to live like a normal person became too much for her that she started being rebellious. She followed in my Mother's footsteps bitched around, drank a lot and ended up with a church of kids that she's failing to maintain. She can't even register with Sassa because she doesn't have an ID and her kids don't have birth certificates..

Her: Yaya Me: Hey

Her: Sorry to disturb you are you busy? Me: was studying

I heard her sniffing.. Me: what's wrong?

Her: Mpumi stepped on a nail it went deeper in and at the clinic the Nurses were yelling at me like how can i allow my child to play outside without shoes especially in a dirty environment but one thing they don't know is that she

doesn't have shoes and i don't even have at least R20 to buy her cheap flops at Pep (crying)I.. You.. You don't know how broken i am.. Momis busy swearing and..

I heard my Mother yelling at the background..

Mom: Aisuka ukhalelani? ukhalela ukuthi you are useless? (are you crying over the fact thatyou are useless)

Me: Than..

Mom: You can't even buy your own child shoes!Futhi you don't even know Mpumi's Father yijuba lika Noah leli (Mpumi is Noah's dove because you don't even know her Father)

Sis: Hlukana nami!! (Leave me alone)

Mom: Voetsek jou hond don't shout at me in mybloody house!

Grandma: Mimi yeka umntwana (Mimi leave thechild alone)

Mom: Uyadelela kanti uyi rubbish (she's

disrespectful)

I heard the door closing and my Sister was crying uncontrollably..
I love my Sister to death and hearing her cry like that, broke me
inside..

I am pregnant i shouldn't be taking all this stress in that my family
is putting me under...

.

. NDILE

Lihle is not like Yaya, Yaya can take in the abuse and just keep quiet
about it but Lihle she's unpredictable and a bit crazy she might go
straight to the police station or just do something that her crazy
mind tells her too so i need her to understand that i am serious.
I love Lihle and I am not ready to lose her over this, all i want is for
her to accept this side of me. I wanna stop going to therapy it's a
waste

of money those sessions don't come cheap and the meds i don't wanna take them anymore, they don't have good side effects.. I needed a plan, so since she was all passed out and traumatized by what happened i can act fast. I took a walk just around the corner to where the Nyaope boys were and i needed their help. I checked if no one was seeing me entering the house that they occupy to smoke, the house has been abandoned and i don't know how they had access to use the house for smoking...

The house has no windows and doors, so i just walked in and they were sitting on some old worn out mattress. It was 3 of them..

Me: Wola

One of them spoke up he was holding a pocket knife..

Him: fede ngiyak'cava cheese boy yala ekasi (i know you, you are the cheese boy of this hood)

His friends laughed..

Him: what brings you to this dark cornermfwethu?

I looked around.. Me: I need your help

Him: uthini? (what are you saying)Me: I need your help

Him: you want help? From Thina?

Me: Yes i am willing to pay R3000 upfront thenR3000 after the work is done

He stood up and whistled..Him: Yizo.. Yizo nja yam' Me: The job is simple

Him: No ngilalele (i am listening)Me: but I have one request

They looked at me..

Me: after this job you must disappear

Him: ehkh kanti ufuna senzeni? (what does want us to do)

Me: I want you to kill someone for me, stab that person to death.. I want the job done tonight i can even pay pay you guys R4 000 each They kept quiet..

Me: I will be outside while you guys think about it
I walked out and stood outside..

.

To be continued [09/28, 13:11] Ron: ¥21LIHLE

I woke up later on in the afternoon before i could get out of bed i sat up straight and recalled what happened, when i slept i totally forgot about what happened but now that i woke up it all came back down crashing to me

that it did happen. I checked my phone and i had missed calls from Mom, i can't face her how will i tell her what happened? My Mother is not weed you cannot just smoke her and go crazy. She will blow up and now that i know Sandile is dangerous i must be careful first before doing anything..

I got out of bed and walked out of the room, the kitchen door was wide open i walked in.

Ma Khumalo was at the kitchen she was busy cleaning..

Me: Ma

She stopped and looked at me..

Her: Lihle bengingazi ukuthi ukhona (i didn't know that you were around)

I stood there and looked down..

Her: You don't look good Lihle what's wrong?

I broke down and she came to me, she helped me sit down..

Her: Yini kanti kwenzakalani? (what's going on)

I was wearing Sandile's tshirt since he ripped mine, i lifted it up and showed her the bite marks together with the bruises..

Her: Hai Lihle!! What happened?I wiped my tears..

Me: Sandile Violated me

She pulled a chair up and sat down next to me she kept quiet for a while trying to process what i just told her.

Her: Ukwenzi? (what did he do to you) Me: He raped me, beat me, and choked me

Her: Ohhh Nkosi yami kanti yini engenelauSandile (what's gotten into him)

She was speechless..

Her: Has he done this to you before?Me: No it's the first time

She closed her eyes and opened them again..

Her: You just had an operation, you just lost a baby kodwa uSathane wani? (what devil is this)

Me: I can't even go back home my Mother isgoing to flip out

Her: MaCele uyokwata into ehambani (MaCeleis going to be angry)

Me: Can you call her and tell her that i will behome late

Her: Of course i will call her

My operation wasn't having mercy on meeither..

Her: Are you in pain?Me: The operation

Her: Should we go to the hospital?Me: Cha Ma (No Ma)

Her: Hai Hlehle i will call him

She took her phone and called him..

She tried him a lot of times but he wasn't answering that it led her to voicemail..

Her: Yey wena Sandile! Come home now Lihle isin pain nx!!!

She hung up..

Her: Let me prepare a bath for you ill put salt it will help with the bruises.

Me: Ngiyabonga Ma (thank you Ma)

.

. NDILE

The leader came out i had just gotten through my second cigarette. He looked around at first and then signaled that i should come inside, i walked in after him. I was wearing a cap that couldn't show my eyes, i really went all out to not have my identity that easily traced by

people from this street. These guys might know me but i doubt they know my name and where i live..

The leader looked at me..Him: R 2000 each upfrontMe: No problem

Him: Manje sibhodisa bani? (who are we killing)

Me: Niyamazi uMaCele? (do you know MaCele)Him: MaCele?.. MaCele?

Me: primary teacher uhlala on the next streetHe thought for a while..

Him: Wooo usho kubo Lihle? (you mean atLihle's house)

Me: Yeah

Him: Ya i know her

Me: Tonight you must break in her house, i don't

care how you do it but i want you to stab that woman to death!
He whistled..

Him: Ehhh uMaCele starts trouble with no one that woman is peaceful why do you want her dead?

Me: I am not going to pay you to ask questions

He looked at his friends and then looked at me..

Him: We will do it I looked at them..

Me: don't even think of fucking me over i have contacts in high places who are going to hunt you down and your families then kill them!

Him: No Bozza we are with you I looked at the time..

Me: I want this job carried out at 20:00 Him: Payment?

Me: do you have a phone?

He got out a black and white screen phone that looked fucked up..

Me: Give me your numbers i will text you to meet me at the complex, i will withdraw 6 000 and give it to you R2 000 each

Their faces lit up..

Me: after the job i will pay another 6 000 Him: Sho yizo Bozza!

Me: give me your numbers He gave me..

The plan is to have Lihle not go home soon, i will drive her home after the job is done so we can find her Mother laying down there in a pool of blood. If i eliminate MaCele i will have Lihle eating from my hand, no relative will take her in. Her relatives are not successful and she doesn't know her Father's family so she will be stuck with me.

. YAYA

It was 10min left before my last class I was in one of the lecture halls eating my Galitos chicken strips with rice, accompanied by a canof Fanta orange. This other girl was sitting in the second raw facing me, she was reading hernotes but kept on stealing glances at me. It's hard being dependent on NSFAS you don't getan allowance, i am sure they won't even cover her full tuition fees. When she stole another glance at me i called her to come using a handgesture, at first she was shy but ended up coming..
Me: These chicken strips are hot i can't finishthem alone would you like to finish them for me?
She looked around first and then nodded..

Me: You can eat i am coming
Her: Thank you
I went out to call my Sister i am sure now she's calm..

Me: Hey
Her: Hi

Me: How are you now?

Her: Ahhh kuyafana (it's still the same)

Me: I will send you R700 via money market but since you don't have an ID you will be forced to go with Mom, give her R200 and take R500 so you can buy Mpumi clothes and shoes

She kept quiet for a while..

Me: Thandeka are you still there? I heard her sniffing..

Her: I don't even know what to say yazi Yayayou are a Godsent

Me: Just call me when you need anything else

Her: Not to bother you that much but we running out of food by next week we won't have anything and you know uGogo (grandma) has to take her meds she can't when she hasn't eaten

Me: It's fine i will see

Her: Rather use Grandma's details to send aiiuMa is going to be a headache

Me: or go open an account at Capitec you and Grandmother so her card can stay with you in that way i can send you money for food you more responsible than Mom

Her: Kodwa yazi Yaya God is going to bless you for everything you doing for us

Me: I will call you now now i have another call coming in

Her: Okay bye

I answered the other call, it was Sandile..

Me: Honey

Him: My pregnant beautiful lady how are you? I laughed..

Him: How are you and the baby?

Me: We are fine just have a lot of cravings Him: Cravings?

Me: Ya now we want Galitos after 5min we want McDonalds

He laughed..

Me: uhmm honey Him: Yes?

Me: I need money to send home Him: How much?

Me: I am not sure Him: R1500?

Me: I think it will be fine

Him: Okay sthandwa sam' i will transfer it nownow

Me: okay

Him: Ngiyanithanda yezwa? (i love you guys)I put my hand on my tummy..

Me: we love you too

I couldn't stop smiling, my heart was melting.This is the first time he has ever said those words to me.

.

To be continuedNo edits

[09/28, 13:21] Ron: ¥22LIHLE

Sandile came back but before we could go to the Hospital MaKhumalo wanted to talk to himin private. The salt bath that she prepared for me helped a great deal with my aching body,

but the bruises were still there. I was sitting at the kitchen and i could hear a bit of shouting coming from the living room, and arguing.

MaKhumalo wasn't taking it lightly to what Sandile did it's something that opened up old wounds for her..

They came back to the kitchen. Ndile: Will you be able to walk? Me:

Yes

I stood up. The sharp pain that was arising from my operation i hope the stitches didn't come off. As we were about to exit, Karabo walked in with my enemy Buhle at times i forget that now they are close friends. Even though i don't like Buhle that much but she is beautiful, you know you get those people whereas their skin colour speaks volumes for them, but with Buhle she is beautiful as a yellow bone that she is..

Karabo: Sanibonani (greetings)

Buhle greeted too..

Karabo: Where is everyone going?

MaKhumalo: We are taking Hlehle to the hospital

Karabo: Is everything okay? Ndile: everything is fine MaKhumalo:
let's go Lihle

We walked out to the car while Sandile remained behind probably catching up with his old fame. I seriously want out of this now i am 25 years and already going through this much, if i keep up imagine how i am going to be when i am 30 years old? I will be emotionally buried, physically dead, and my heart would just be bleeding profusely..

He came back after a few minutes. Ndile: Sorry about that.. Let's go
He unlocked the car and we got in. I hope the

Doctor gives me something that will help so that when i go back home my Mother doesn't notice anything or else she is going to flip out completely..

.

. YAYA

Candice fetched me after i had attended my last class i was feeling good especially after the phone call i had with Sandile earlier on, hearing him telling me that he loves me was heart warming. I got to think about everything as i sat in that lecture hall and as much as this sounds totally insane but i am going to marry Sandile, i am going to be his second wife. What also contributed to me wanting this is the fact that i don't wanna end up like my Sister having to struggle to provide for my baby, this will give me and my baby the stability that we need. I am going to be the first from my Family to get

married and be in a stable marriage if i could call it that. I am still going to be very much independent, Sandile does want me to finish school he does want me to get that degree, i just hope Lihle is ready to accept me because iam not going anywhere..

.

. NDILE

I drove up to Nkabinde's surgery the only Doctor that comes through for me in such situations money rules the world, with money you can control anyone if given the chance.

Nkabinde had a patient in so we waited at the reception, i took out my phone and transferred R2 000 for Yaya. I looked at Lihle and she was an emotional wreck which hurt me, this is the girl i love i have been with her for 10 years. She is my queen, she rules my heart and i am sure that we going to bounce back from this after

her Mother's tragic death. Speaking of that i have to drive back to the complex and meet upwith that Nyaope guy so i can give him the money. I went to my Mother.

Me: Ma

Ma: Yini? (what)

My Mother was mad at me it's understandable she had to see herself through Lihle today, she had to be reminded of what she went through..

Me: I am quickly driving to the complex wantsomething?

She shook her head no. I went to Lihle..

Me: I am going to the complex to get a pack ofcigarettes want something?

She shook her head no too..

I took out R400 from my wallet and gave it toher..

Me: In case i am not back in time you can just

go in

I went to the receptionist to tell her that Lihle is with me she must tell Dr Nkabinde that. At least i have told Nkabinde about Lihle before he will know what to do..

I went out then got into my car and drove to the complex..

As i was driving i received a call, i didn't recognize the number..

Me: Hello? Voice: Stranger Me: Who is this? Voice: It's Buhle Me:

Ohh hey

Buhle: Vele manje ekini wang'shaya nge Bomb(at your house you ignored me)

Me: You know my wife doesn't like you so i didn't wanna upset her

She laughed..

Buhle: Your wife? Ya neh

Me: anyway how have you been?

Buhle: I don't know why don't you come over later and i will tell you how i have been

Me: still can't keep your panties up?

Buhle: Ahh it's not like that all the dicks I've been riding are starting to bore me now, there's only one that i miss

Me: How many have you been riding? Buhle: aike that's my business

Me: Look i am driving i will call you again Buhle: Okay you still hot though

Me: thank you and you still beautiful Buhle: i will wait for your call ke later Me: sharp

I hung up and put my phone on the passenger's

seat and continued driving..

.

[09/28, 13:27] Ron: ¥24LIHLE

I looked at myself in the mirror i haven't worn this dress in a very long time Sandile didn't specify which restaurant but since this might be the last dinner date we gonna have, i need to look my best. My Mother walked in..

Mom: You look beautifully stunningMe: Thank you

She sat down on my bed.. Me: How are you feeling now?

Mom: ngizoba right Lihle go and enjoy yourselfMe: I don't wanna leave you here and..

Mom: I have prayed about it and I am sure

whatever it was it is gone

I looked at her and i could see that there's something she was keeping from me.

Me: Ma kwenzakalani (Ma what's wrong)

She starred at the wall until tears formed in hereyes, My Mother is not someone to just break down. I sat next to her..

Me: What is it?

Mom: While I was sleeping i had a dreamMe: what dream?

Mom: Your Father and i we were walking around next to the beach wearing pour white iwas holding a rose and we were holding hands I put my hand around her shoulders.

Mom: I..I felt the love that we once shared hewas real and everything was real

Me: I know how you miss him and i miss himtoo

Mom: It's just so unusual i haven't dreamt about him in a long time for him to come now and..

Me: I am sorry i know how sensitive this topic is for you

Mom: I just wish i could see him once more i just wish he could see how you have grown up

Me: I am sure wherever he is, he is looking down at us

She wiped her tears and smiled..

Mom: Which restaurant are you guys going to?

Me: I don't really know he didn't say Mom: He looks like he is trying

Me: He is

I didn't wanna tell her about what happened i didn't wanna upset her more...

Mom: It's been a while since I last saw you wearing this dress

Me: I know Mom that's why i decided to wear it today
The dress is a long sleeve dress with a turtleneck so it hid the
bruises pretty well..

The door bell rang..Me: It must be him

We stood up and went to the kitchen to open the door he stood there looking
handsome as ever. He was wearing a black suit his cologne just
filled up the whole atmosphere..

Ndile: Sawubona MaCele (greetings MaCele) Mom: Sandile

Ndile: Can i please take your Daughter out for dinner i will bring her
back home no later than 21:00

Mom nodded..

Mom: i give you my permission Me: I'll get my bag

We walked back to the bedroom..

Me: Mom are you sure that you going to be fine?

Mom: go enjoy yourself Hlehle i will be fine I took my bag and hugged her..

Me: call me if you not feeling well Mom: I will call

I made my way to the door to exit. Mom: Hlehle

Me: Yes?

Mom: I love you Me: I love you too

I walked back to Sandile very much worried about my Mother i hope she is going to be okay..

.

.

KING

I went to sit in the lounge and waited for her together with the boy that she was with to come and explain herself. They both came in and stood by the door glancing down in embarrassment, she was playing with the fingers. I took out my gun and nicely placed it ontop of the table..

Me: Please have a sit

They looked at the gun and then moved uniformly to sit on the couch.

Me: No.. No.. No one must move i don't want both of you sitting together next to each other in one place

The boyfriend moved..

Me: What's happening under my Sister's roof?

I am King Nkambule i am 28 years of age, and iam a cop. I have been transferred to Gauteng and tomorrow morning i must make my way

there. Just like everyone else i had my life fully planned out, i had a fiancé and a week before we had to get married she was gunned down some crackheads hijacked her not only did theytake her car but they took her life too and I mustsay when that happened I felt like my life had come to a stand still. To prevent being alone my Sister decided that I should move in with her and her daughter off which i just found her about to have sex under my Sister's roof with her boyfriend. She is 16 years old and right now she is in big trouble..

Me: You were playing music very loud and wheni walked in he was ontop of you

Her: We were still dressed we weren't doinganything other than kissing uncle King

Me: You had your top offShe kept quiet..
I looked at the boyfriend..

Me: weren't you forbidden to come here? Him: I was
I looked at my Niece..

Me: I am leaving tomorrow is this how you want to spend my last
day with me? Fighting?

She shook her head no..

Me: Go to your room and think about what you have done

I looked at the boyfriend.. Me: I'll drive you home

I stood up and took my gun..

Me: If you ever and i mean ever try to pull that shit again i will
hunt you down and kill you! I am a cop i will get away with it

He kept quiet..

Me: If you do love her you will wait for her until she turns 18 are we
clear?

He nodded..Me: let's go

.

. YAYA

Candice had prepared lasagna for us tonight.She is a great cook and i always have her cooking whenever she comes over.

Her: So have you given any thought to what wewas discussing?

Me: Yes and I am going to do itShe smiled..

Her: It's time for us side chicks to get up andget our own

She poured herself some wine..

Me: I doubt Big Daddy is going to make you hersecond wife

Her: Me and marriage we don't get along i am fine with how things are between us

We sat down on the couch and started eating..

Her: Think of all the power you going to have drive that bitch so mad that she up and leave! ride Sandile's dick right in front of her if you have too!

i laughed..

Me: Let's not be that cruel

Her: Shine girl, it's your turn to shine! These main chicks need to understand that if they don't play their cards right we will play the game for them

.

. NDILE

We were halfway through dinner and Lihle was getting drunk from all the glasses of wine that

she had been having. She doesn't drink that much so i got her Saint Claire sweet red, the 3rd glass she was already seeing the stars. I needed to relax her so that she forgets completely about going home, i looked at the time and it was 21:00. I hope that stupid Nyaope guy did everything accordingly..

Lihle: do we have to leave?

Me: Yes sweetheart before you get very drunk i have already paid the bill let's go

She got up from the chair and almost fell after a few steps because of her heels..

Her: Oops!

I sat her down and took them off she looked at me and smiled..

Her: I know.. I know that.. What is it again?

She started laughing.. I stood up and helped her to get up, i put my hand around her waist and we made our way out to the parking lot.

I

unlocked and put her in the front seat, i closed the door and stood a bit far while making that call..

Him: Bozza? Me: And?

I could hear that he was breathing heavily..

Him: It's done simcishile (it's done we have killed her)

Me: did you make it seem like a robbery?

Him: besifake ne kabasa Bozza (we were wearing Balaclavas)

Me: gloves? Him: sure Bozza Me: Is she dead?

Him: I stabbed her a lot of times and left her there bleeding kodwa sicove ama items ukuzekubonakale ngathi vele it was a break in (we have stolen a few items to make it look like a

break in)

Me: Perfect.. Next payment i will call youHim: Sho

I smiled a little and went to get in the car, Lihle had passed out. I put her braids at the back andkissed her forehead.

Me: I love you so much baby girl, now therewon't be anyone standing between us

.

[09/28, 13:27] Ron: ¥23LIHLE

After seeing Dr Nkabinde i went out and calledmy Mother since we were waiting for Ndile to come back. I needed to speak to my Mother because what happened today was too muchand it's suffocating me, i just wanna go homeand be with my Mom right now that's all i want..

Mom: Hlehle

Me: That took you long to answer
Mom: I was sleeping
She sounded a bit down..

Me: aren't you supposed to be at work?
Mom: I came back early
Hlehle

Me: What's wrong are you sick?

Mom: angazi kwenzakalani kodwa nginvalo bese intliziyo yami
ibuye ishaye kakhulu (i have this fear that makes my heart to beat
abnormally fast)

Me: what could be the cause? Have you went back to drinking
coffee again?

Mom: I drink rooibos

Me: Did you call the Pastor and tell him about this? Could be a
demonic attack

Mom: He is not around he went to Swaziland remember i can't reach
him, i am sure it's

nothing Hlehle i will prayMe: Okay

Mom: Wena ukuphi? (where are you)

Me: Uhm.. uSandile and his Mother took me to the Dr

Mom: Why?

Me: My operation the stitches were coming offMom: Why didn't you call me?

Me: It's nothing serious Mama i am fineShe exhaled..

Mom: Just come back home Hlehle now i am worried about you

Me: I am coming

Mom: Okay i will see you when you get hereMe: Okay

Even if things don't work out between me and Sandile, at least i will always have my Mother..

.
. NDILE

I met up with the guy he came alone and notwith his friends which was better, i looked around and handed him the envelope..

Me: Make sure you carry this through perfectlybecause if you don't i will hunt you down, i promise you boy you don't wanna mess with me!

Him: ngikuzwile (i heard you)

Me: The rest of the money you will get it afterthe job is done

Him: Okay

Me: quick death, the other two can hold her down while you put the knife through her throat.Stab her there a few times, then after go to her chest and then her heart

Him: I am hearing you

Me: fuck me up and your family will pay for her life!

I was taking chances with that statement because i didn't know if he had a family or not..

He nodded..

Me: Now voetsek! Before someone sees us Him: sure bozza

He walked away maintaining that tsotsi walk and i went to my car, i really want Lihle all to myself and i will do anything to possess her in all kinds of ways. She is mine and no one is going to stand in the way of my getting what's mine, not even her own Mother! I have put up with MaCele for a long time now she has to go..

.
.

YAYA

I have been thinking about what Sandile proposed and quite frankly even though it poses as a big step but it's a big step that's going to be very fruitful. I had my phone in my hand, busy pacing up and down in the kitchen with my other hand on my tummy. Do I really wanna commit myself? Do I really wanna be a second best for the rest of my marriage? Comeon Yaya think is this really what you want?

Candice: What's wrong with you?Me: Nothing

She came and sat down then looked at me..(2min later)

Me: I have decided to be Sandile's second wife

I didn't even look at her as i said that.. I continued pacing up and down waiting for anyresponse from her that's going to be judgemental..

Candice: You not a fool like i thought you wereI stopped and looked at her..

Candice: You are going to use that baby and marriage to suck him dry! Whatever you do make sure you don't miscarry. As long as you still carrying his baby he won't touch you, aftertwo years when you done with school divorce his ass take all his money and skip the country!

Me: I never really thought of that

Candice: make sure he marries you in community of property and let him marry hiswhatever her name is traditionally

Me: Lihle might not allow that

Candice: Fuck Lihle you the one with the baby!Use that to your own advantage!

Candice is right this might just work..

.

.

LIHLE

Sandile finally came back MaKhumalo made her way into the car while i asked to speak to Sandile privately..

Him: How are you feeling now? Me: I wanna go home

Him: huh?

I made sure that we were in the presence of people and not that far away from his car incase he tries to do something. I held both his hands..

Me: I want you to drive me home and then i don't wanna see you for a while until i make up my mind if i wanna continue being in this relationship with you or not

That took him by surprise his facial expression changed didn't look pleasing anymore..

Him: Let go of my hands

Me: No

He looked around and looked at me..Him: Lihle let go off me!

Me: not until you promise me that you are goingto drive me home from here before you drop your Mother off

He was getting pissed, his breathing startedgetting a bit heavy..

Him: Today you just woke up and planned howto piss me off didn't you?

Me: You don't love me anymore just let me goHim: So now you know how i feel?

I kept quiet..

Him: You know how i feel now? His voice was firm and that scaredme a bit..

Him: You think i am scared to beat you up in

front of all these people? In front of my Mother? You think im scared?

I saw his Mother getting out of the car.. MaKhumalo:

Kwenzakalani? (what's going on) Him: Nix Ma (nothing)

I let go of his hands..

MaKhumalo: Asambeni ke (let's go) He put his hands on my cheeks..

Him: Okay you win but i am asking something from you

Me: what?

Him: I just wanna spend today with you then after you can have all the time you need to make up your mind

Me: I..

Him: If you scared we can go to a restaurant where there's gonna be people.. All i want is to spend tonight with you that's all

I didn't know what to say..

He leaned over and kissed me, the same way that he used to kiss me all those years when we were still madly in love. Before he became this monster that he is today!

.

[09/28, 13:27] Ron: ¥25LIHLE

I slowly opened my eyes and Sandile was staring at me while smiling i ran my eyes around and the room was bright, the sun was shining in through the curtain..

He leaned over and perked my lips then looked at me again, with his elbow balancing on the bed and his hand balancing his head. He had not shirt on..

Him: Morning MaKhumaloMe: Morning

I raised my head up from the pillow and it felt like someone plunged in an assegai that went through my forehead and protruded at the back of my head..

Him: how are you feeling? Me: like hell

I looked at myself and I was only left with a bumshort and a bra, i looked at Sandile..

Him: don't worry we did nothing I still looked at him..

Him: I believe if we did something you would be in pain, last night you had a lot to drink and I put you in bed

I closed my eyes..

Me: My Mother is going to kill me

I took my phone and i had missed calls from my Aunt kind of weird, i called her back..

Me: Mamncane (Aunty)

Her: Lihle?

Me: Ngithole ama missed call wakho (i got your missed calls)

Her: Ya kudala ngikufonela (i have been calling you)

Me: what's wrong? Her: Where are you?

Me: I am at Sandile's house Her: Is he there?

Me: Yes

Her: can you give him the phone? Me: okay

I handed Sandile the phone, i was getting a bit scared..

Sandile: Hello... Yes it's him who is speaking.. Okay... Yes....

He looked at me..

Him: What?..

Judging from his facial expression i could tellthat something was not right..

Him: Okay i will tell her..He sighed..

Him: Bye

He lowered my phone and looked at me..Me: what is it?

He put his hands on my cheeks..

Him: go and bath so i can take you homeMe: what did my Aunt want?

Him: Lihle..

Me: No Sandile tell me!!Him: It's your Mother

Me: My Mother? What about her?Him: she's..

I looked at him with my big eyes widening more..

Him: She's no more

Me: no more? What is no more?.. No more what?

Him: She is.. She is dead

I heard what he was saying but i couldn't comprehend..

. KING

My Sister came out from the house and made her way to me i was putting the last of my things inside the trunk of my car..

Her: Detective Nkambule

She was holding a Tupperware that had scones..

Me: don't call me that as yet

Her: Captain said the reason why you have been

transferred to Gauteng is because you are the best at what you do hence why you got this Detective position from Gauteng

Me: I just think he wants to get rid of me

Her: because he sees you as a threat to his position?

I took the Tupperware from her and opened it..Me: freshly baked scones

Her: home made just for my favorite BrotherMe: thank you

Her: I hope that when you come back to visit you come with a lady

Me: keep on dreaming Her: It's been 3 years now

Me: So? Does that mean i should just forget about her?

Her: of course not.. You know i didn't say that

Me: There's no woman that's going to steal my heart the same way that she did

Her: No woman should be like her

I opened the door at the back seats and put the Tupperware..

Her: I want to see you happy

Me: I am happy.. Who says i need a woman to be happy?

My phone started ringing, i took it out..Me: It's Cap

She nodded and i answered..Me: Cap?

Him: are you on your way?Me: almost

Him: I think you should get goingMe: something wrong?

Him: I just heard that there's a homicide case at

the station where you will be working from Me: Homicide case?

Him: Some woman was stabbed to death Me: Is it?

Him: I think it's going to be good if you take on the case it will be a way of you introducing yourself

Me: ohw

Him: Nkambule you were the best that i had here and when that post came through i knew you would be suitable for it, anyone would kill for that Detective position in 5 years time you could be cap

Me: I am honoured that you chose me

The reason why i was transferred and given the Detective position is that the cap sees me as a threat, he knew that if i became a

Detective at our station i would be one position to taking his job

Him: go make us proud

I lowered my phone and hung up..I looked at my Sister..

Me: I have to go

Her: Is everything okay?

Me: Apparently there's a new homicide case atmy new working place

Her: go on Detective Nkambule go get them!She punched me a little on my shoulder..

I chuckled and looked at her.. Me: I will just be 4 hours away..

Her: and a phone call away i knowMe: Come here

She came closer and i hugged her..

.

.

LIHLE

I didn't even bath after Sandile told me that all i wanted was to go home and see for myself, see if it's true or not. He decided to come with me.

From the gate a lot of people gathered there was even a yellow tape across preventing anyone from getting in, police cars were parked everyone was just standing there like it's a circus. I went through the crowd with Sandile following me, i went under the yellow tape when a cop came to us...

Him: Sorry it's a crime scene you not allowed to be here

Me: I wanna see.. She's my Mother Him: Still..

Me: Just let me through!! (shouting) I closed my eyes..

Me: let me go in please

He looked at us..

Sandile: Please lieutenantHe sighed..

Him: fine you can go in

we walked up to the house the kitchen door was wide open. We went inside and some cops were standing at the kitchen..

Cop 1: who are you?

We made our way to the living room and there i was welcomed by a pool of blood, she was in a body bag on top of a stretcher. The Morgue people were ready to take her body to the car..

Me: Mama?

Sandile put his hands on my shoulders..Him: Baby..

Me: I wanna see her!! I wanna see her!!!

They stopped and unzipped her, she had stabwounds on her throat looking at her face she

looked like she was peacefully sleeping..My heart sank to my knees..

Me: Mama..

They zipped her and pushed that stretcher bag to the exit, my mouth was slightly open. My eyes were full of tears i was sinking lower to the floor with Sandile holding me. You cannot begin to imagine what i was going through..

[09/28, 13:31] Ron: ¥26LIHLE

Unfortunately the Police said we won't be able to do anything at my house until evidence is collected. They said they waiting for some Detective who will be handling the case and later tomorrow they should be done then we can proceed to plan for the funeral. Sandile and his Mother allowed me and My Aunt to stay over at their house until the police are done at the house. It still wasn't sinking to me, it didn't

feel right. My Mother was a very peaceful woman, if she wasn't at work she's at home or church. For someone to just do something like that to her, kill her in such a cruel manner as if like she was an Animal truly broke me. It shattered my heart into a million pieces that couldn't even be picked up..

I am an orphan now, i am all on my own. Yes I do have relatives but you know how relatives are they're present most of the time when your parents are still around but as soon as you find yourself in such a situation they distance themselves after the funeral. I am 25 and i am old enough to be independent but i currently have nothing, i was still trying to find my feet when this happened. I felt someone gently brushing my thigh, i looked up and it was Sandile. He wiped my tears..

Him: I will find whoever did this i promise you I closed my eyes as tears fell..

Him: Come here

I moved closer to him and he cuddled me..Him: Shhhh it's going to be okay

I don't think i will ever get through this pain..

.

. KING

I finally arrived in Gauteng i will be forced to stay in a lodge until i find a suitable place. It's going to eat my pocket because they charge you per night, i looked around the room and this was going to be home for a month probably. I got my stuff from the car and just put them on the bed, i didn't bring a lot of things other than my clothes and my fiancé's pictures. I took off my clothes then took the towel and made my way to the shower, i ran the taps and waited for hot water but nothing. This is what i hate with lodges there is a schedule for hot water. I got in

and showered with cold water i wanna go to the station and see how everything is handled, i was supposed to start tomorrow morning but I would like to be a day ahead.. After showering i made my way out and dried myself with the towel, i took my phone and called my Sister..

Her: Hello Me: Hey Sis

Her: Have you arrived? Me: Yes

Her: How is the place?

Me: Haven't checked the town just staying out at the lodge

Her: When are you going to find your own place?

Me: as time goes on i will Her: what are you doing now?

Me: preparing myself i wanna go down to the

station

Her: aren't you supposed to start tomorrow?

Me: Yes but i really wanna review this homicidecase and quickly solve it

Her: making an impression?Me: Sort off

Her: okay i am cooking call you laterMe: be good i love you

Me: love you too

.

. NDILE

This was difficult Lihle was more broken than ithought she would be she might not recover from this.

My phone rang, she had cried herself to sleep on the couch. I walked out answering without

checking the caller ID..Me: Hello

The person kept quiet..Me: Hello?

Voice: Bozza!

Wtf.. I checked the caller ID i cannot believe thisstupid fuck crackhead just called me..

Me: Entlek why are you calling me?

Him: Yooh Bozza amagata everywhere (there'scops everywhere)

Me: so?

Him: give us the money so we can go away! Mina angeke ngiyedanyaya (i won't go to jail)

Me: calm the fuck down and listen to me! You are not going to go to jail you stupidfool!

Him: what if bazala? (what if they come here)

Me: If you did everything accordingly then they won't trace you

Him: Mina ngithukile (i am scared)

Me: trust me you don't wanna deal with me right now i will be your worst nightmare than the cops!

I hunged up and texted Yaya:

"I am coming over" Me: Shit!!

These stupid boys might give me away i need a strategy, i need to think. I need to think fast!

.

. LIHLE

I woke up and looked around the house was very quiet. I got up from the couch and i went to see if there was someone around but unfortunately there was no one. No sign of my

Aunt, Sandile, or even MaKhumalo. I put on my shoes and walked out of the house, i don't know where I was going but i just walked. I walked down the street and noticed the police cars still parked at my house, i stood in the middle of the street all confused. I didn't know if i should go in there or what, i can't get the picture of the blood out of my head. She probably was in pain, she probably was screaming and begging for her life but they continued. They continued to slaughter her as if like she was an Animal..

I remained there until i heard a car hooting behind me, that didn't move me at all. The person kept on hooting and i turned around, it was a Hyundai ix35. Out of nowhere i approached it and started hitting the bonnet while yelling..

Me: Stop it!!! Stop it!! Stop hooting at me i am not crazy!!!!
(shouting)

The door opened and some gentleman came

out, he made his way to me and just looked at me. I looked at him too without saying anything but tears fell..

Him: are you okay? I kept quiet...

Him: what is your name? Silence..

Him: are you hurt? Silence..

Him: Look i am a cop i can help you

Me: Can you help bring my Mother back? Him: What?

Me: then you can't help!

I walked away and he followed me. He grabbed my arm..

Him: Mam'

I turned around and punched him with my other

hand..

Him: What the???

After punching him i walked in reverse then after i turned back and started running..

Him: Hey!!!

As i was running i heard the door of his car closing, that didn't stop me i kept on running..

[09/28, 13:31] Ron: ¥27KING

I have had an experience with hard-headed girls before but i have never come across this type or kind of a hard-headed girl, only when she tripped and fell was i able to cuff her and get her in my car, then took her down to the station. Now i am sitting on top of the counter at the reception just staring at her with my feet dangling, she is sitting on one of the chairs facing down if it was up to her she would just run across and strangle me to death. She was

dirty that fall had no mercy on her, her left foot was bleeding i think she hurt her big toe when she fell it's bleeding and swollen but that doesn't seem to bother her. She is barefooted when i caught up with her she didn't have any shoes on i don't know what happened to her shoes. She has long thin braids that her hair band is restricting them from crowding her faceshe has the most beautiful big eyes even though they full of tears, her thick lips i don't even have a word to describe them..

One of the lieutenants came to me, he stoodnext to me leaning against the counter and joined me in starring at this beautiful dark skinned girl..

Lieutenant: What are we going to do with her?

I folded my arms as i continued starring at her..

Me: Just continue starring at her she will givein

I can see that what we are doing is starting to

rub off against her in the most uncomfortable way from her chest i can witness the movement of her abnormal breathing, i am only waiting for the smoke to be expelled from her ears. We almost there.. Just a little more..

Her: You can stop staring at me i am not an animal!

I sent out a chuckle as i jump off the counter, i looked at the lieutenant.

Me: I'll take it from here

I went and sat next to her luckily the station is not full or else all eyes would've been on her.

This time around i didn't look at her, i looked at the officer that was certifying documents..

Her: I am not crazy

I turned and looked at her, those tears have made her cheeks black they mixed with whatever blackness make up that she put under her eyes..

Me: I don't think that you are crazy She kept quiet..

You don't need a therapist to see that she was deeply hurt, i don't know what happened but the person responsible for this really broke this girl..

Me: Why don't we go to my place so that i can take a look at your foot?

She turned and looked at me with eyes screaming "You Son of a sea biscuit you want to take advantage".

I immediately call one of the lieutenants to come..

Me: I am about to take this lady down to the lodge where i am staying you can call me on my cell every 10min if i don't answer send a car

I turned and looked at her..

Me: That means i would've killed her

The lieutenant looks at me dumbfounded..

Me: get a pen and pad so i can give you the address, my room number, and my cell phonenumber

The lieutenant did as he was told i looked at her and i think that relaxed her a bit into trusting me..

.

. YAYA

Sandile was ontop of me riding me with all the strength that he had in him as if like we haven't had sex in a year, he was holding my thighs with his hands and just spreading my legs far apart to get better access

I don't know if this was safe for the baby but i suggested that we use a condom. For the first time ever he wasn't strangling me or biting me but we were having sex like a civil couple..

His hands moved from my thighs to picking up my butt and pulling me closer to him forcing me to open more wider, i won't lie i have missed him. I missed having him inside of me..

He pulled out and then gently pulled me to the edge of the bed, he was standing up now with my legs wrapped around him. He went for it as he rubbed my clit..

He was moaning and i was in the world of my own too, this seems to be relaxing him from whatever that was troubling him. My body tensed up as i was close to getting close to release my juices, he noticed and then pulled out. He quickly let his tongue work its magic he pressed his head very much hard against my clitoris as I had the most tense orgasm. It was so damn good that i lost my mind, i didn't know what to do with myself..

Me: Ahhhhhhhhhhhhhhh

.

. LIHLE

We drove up to the lodge i don't know why thiscop was so kind to me after i had punched him,yelled, and kept on hitting the bonnet of his car embarrassing him in broad daylight..

Him: And we here

He opened the door and went out i sat there stilltrying to process why he is being soo nice..

He disturbed me from my thoughts when heopened the door from my side..

Him: If i take off this cuffs promise you won't gocrazy?

I slowly nodded as he looked at me, he is notafraid to just look at me..

He uncuffed me and i rubbed my wrists, theywere a bit painful the cuffs were tight..

Him: Sorry if that hurt you

Me: sorry for punching youHe chuckled..

Him: lucky for me you have pretty small hands i should be asking you if you didn't hurt your littlehand, he took my hand and checked..

Him: no bones broken?I shook my head no..

I looked down it's only now the pain from mybig toe hits me..

Him: will you be able to walk?Me: I think so

I am not used to walking barefooted so my feethad it rough today they were even aching..

I got out of the car and as much as i was tryingto walk but it was difficult, it was like i was walking on top of egg shells. He looked at me and laughed while shaking his head..

Him: let me..

Me: I am fine!! Im good

He looked at me giving me that beautiful widesmile of his, wider than Kanye West's one..

He turned around..

Him: Come on i will be your hoarseMe: No i am good

Him: for once don't be hard-headed

I put my hands on his shoulders and jumped, he put his arms under my legs and made sure i was comfortably secure on his back..

Him: are you okay?I nodded..

Him: can't hear youMe: I am fine

He started walking while singing i just laid myhead on his back to the sound of his voice relaxing me

"Yeah, you're looking at the truth, the money never lie.. No I'm the one, yeah, I'm the one..Early mornin' in the dawn, know you wanna ride now. (Let's ride.)

I'm the one, yeah. (Let's ride.). I'm the one, yeah..Heard you're sick of all those other imitators, Don't let the only real one intimidate you..

See you watchin', don't run outta time now"

.

[09/28, 13:31] Ron: ¥28KING

I was starring at her while she slept peacefully on my bed. It was very evident that she had been through a lot, who could've possibly hurt her like this. I have worked with such cases before where a woman is tormented by her husband or partner, i hope that's not the case with her. Which man would possibly hurt such a beautiful soul?

I needed to go and get something to eat, i wouldbe doing a grave mistake to leave her alone here unattended but i need to get something she might wake up hungry. I walked to the bed and gently woke her up..

She slowly opened her eyes..

Me: I am going to get something to eat i saw acomplex nearby

She nodded, then got up..Her: I will come with

Me: are you sure?She nodded..

She got out of bed and looked at herself, herclothes were dirty..

Her: or maybe not

Me: I can borrow you my track pants and mytshirt, you can also wear my sleepers

She agreed..

.
. NDILE

I had a good session with Yaya i have had sex before with Hlehle but with Yaya she just knows her story in bed. She was at the kitchen preparing something to eat when i snuck up on her and hugged her from behind, she smiled..

Her: Hey are you going already? Me: Ya i am

Her: Why don't you stay for dinner because i wanna talk to you

Me: about?

She turned around and looked at me while putting her hands around my neck..

Her: Yes.. Me: Yes?

Her: I will marry you.. I will be your second wife

With all the fuckery that's been going on i really needed to hear that.

Me: are you sure?

She smiled and nodded...I hugged her..

Me: You have just made me the happiest manHer: I love you

Me: I love you too

My phone rang.. She broke the hug and I went to get it, it was My Mother..

Me: Ma?

Her: Sandile ukuphi? (where are you)Me: I am around

Her: Cela ubuye there's an emergencyMe: an emergency?

Her: Lihle is missing

Me: what do you mean that Lihle is missing?

Her: Me and her Aunt went to buy vegetables we left her sleeping on the couch when we came back she was not here

Me: What?

Her: Her phone is here

Me: Ma uLihle is not in a good emotional state to be left alone

Her: I know and i feel bad already Me: I am on my way

I hung up..

Yaya: Is everything okay?

Me: I have to go Lihle is missing Her: Missing?

Me: she was left alone in the house and she disappeared

Her: Oh no that's terrible Me: I know

I got my car keys and kissed her.Me: I will call you

Her: Okay i hope you find herMe: me too

I walked out to my car. Lihle pisses me offsometimes she can actually like a child..

.

. LIHLE

I thought we were just getting something to eatbut i ended up helping him buy a few groceriesand other things that he needed..

Him: How is your toe?Me: Still painful

We were now driving back to the lodge.. Him: You must go to the Doctor tomorrowMe: I will

King is very sweet i didn't know that guys likehim still exist..

Me: Thank you He looked at me..Him: for?

Me: For today Him: You welcome

We focused on the road..Him: what happened?

I took time before replying to that..Me: My Mom passed on

Him: I am sorry to hear thatHe continued driving...

Him: What happened?

Me: she was stabbed to death apparently someone broke in at my house and attackedher

He whistled...

Him: that's a tragic way to die i am sorry

Me: I just want the people who did this to be found

We kept quiet..

Him: wait i am meant to be working on a homicide case of a woman who was murdered

Me: really?

Him: Yes that's my first case I turned and looked at him..

Me: Can you please find them?

Him: I am the best at what i do hence i got this promotion

He held my hand..

Him: I will find them.. I promise Me: thank you

He let go of my hand..

Him: can you please drive me home? I am sure my fiancé is worried

Him: fiancé?

Me: You didn't think I was single right? He chuckled..

Him: No I am just shocked he would allow you to go out of home in that state

Me: He wasn't around Him: There goes our food Me: Maybe next time

Him: I will hold you to those words Me: friends?

Him: friends

.

. NDILE

I arrived at home my Mother was sitting with

Lihle's Aunt..

Me: She hasn't come back?Ma: No

Me: Lihle can be a headache sometimes

Aunt: She just lost her Mother she is notthinking straight

Me: That's no reason to wonder around in thestreets it's dangerous
out there

Mom: Let's just try and find her

I opened the fridge and took out a can of beer..

Me: I don't know where to even start looking forher

Aunt: Her friends Me: I will start there

We heard a car pulling up..Mom: Who is that?

We waited for whoever it was to come in, after

a few minutes someone knocked then the door opened. Lihle walked in with another guy, my Mom stood up and went to Hug her..

Mom: Lihle kodwa you gave us a scare

My eyes were fixed on this guy who just brought my fiancé in..

Her Aunt stood up too and went to hug her.. Aunt: Where were you?

Lihle: I am sorry that i gave everyone such a fright..

We focused on the guy..

Him: My name is King i am a Detective. I found her wondering around in the streets

Then what? He took her to his place? Why is she wearing his clothes? I was starting to get very mad. Here we were worried about her thinking something happened but she went to bitch around me and her we going to have a lengthy discussion privately after this guy has

left..

¥29

LIHLE

It was a very awkward moment.

MaKhumalo: Thank you for bringing her back safe and sound

King: It's part of my job He looked at me..

King: I hope tomorrow you will go to the Dr so they can check your big toe

Me: I will

He put his hand on my shoulder..

King: Be good and i promise you i will find the perpetrators

Ndile: You will find the perpetrators? King looked at Ndile..

King: I am in charge of the homicide caseNdile: Again who are you?

Me: Ndile..

Ndile: I am not talking to you Hlehle

King: I am Detective Nkambule and you cannot talk to her like that

Ndile: she is my fiancé

King: If that's how you talk to her you cannot do it in my presence

Ndile: what law am i breaking "detective"

MaKhumalo: Detective thank you very much for bringing her back

Aunt: what happened to your clothes?Ndile: good question

King: they were dirty and ripped she didn't feel comfortable in them

Ndile: Which part of your job says "Take a

woman home"

King smiled and looked at him..

King: Again you cannot talk to me like that

Ndile: you in my house i can talk to you howeverI want there's no law preventing me from doingso

MaKhumalo: Sandile please..

Ndile: we shouldn't be scared by the fact that heis a cop

King: I think i should leave MaKhumalo: Thank you againMe:

Thank you

He looked at me and then walked out. We allremained quiet for a moment, Ndile looked atmy Aunt.

Ndile: I must accept such a behaviour anddisrespect?

Aunt: I will talk to her

Ndile: Please do because truthfully speaking this i cannot tolerate and won't tolerate

My Aunt asked to talk to me in private, we went outside..

Aunt: what happened?

Me: I already told everyone

Aunt: No Hlehle i mean what's going on ngaweshowing up wearing another man's clothes?

My Aunt has always been big on respect when it comes to your husband or fiancé, she is very old school she dwells on the man is the head of the family and should always be respected no matter what.

Aunt: showing up pho with the same man kubo? In front of his Mother Hlehle? You know how stubborn the Khumalos are ufuna bakubheke kanjani? (how do you want them to look at you)

Me: Sorry Aunty

Aunt: I am not shouting or angry at you, now

you left with me and i must show you the way and guide you, i would be a bad guardian if i allow you to do such things

Me: I know

Aunt: Phela his Mother told me that after the funeral they wanna start the negotiations it's always been your Mother's wish for you to leave home in a rightful manner please don't disappoint her, don't disappoint us.

I nodded..

Aunt: You know how jealous your cousins are that you the first one to get married without having a baby, the first one to ever have a stable relationship don't mess this up and make them happy. These days nje girls are being played by boys you are lucky to have found one that wanna make you his wife

Me: I know Aunty

Aunt: You will never find someone like Sandile

Hlehle remember that Me: I will

Aunt: let's go back inside

My Aunt holds Sandile on a high pedestal she doesn't know what he is about. We went back inside the house and MaKhumalo was dishing up..

Ndile: no Karabo nje where is she? It's late! MaKhumalo: She will be here

MaKhumalo looked at me..

Her: ukahle Lihle? (are you okay)

Me: Yebo Ma ngikahle (Yes Ma i am fine) Ndile: let's go and talk in private MaKhumalo: asidleni k'qala (let's eat first) Ndile: we won't take long

We walked out to the outside room, he locked the door and leaned against it while starring at

me..

Ndile: Did you sleep with him?Me: I didn't

Ndile: Why are you wearing his clothes?I showed him my big toe..

Me: I fell and hurt myself so he helped in cleaning the wound and then put a band aid

Ndile: His place is a hospital?Me: No

Ndile: Your Mother just passed on and you go out there and become a hoe you are not respecting her memory! Do you think she wouldbe proud of you right now?

Me: Kodwa I didn't sleep with him njena!!

I was upset that he would bring my Mother intothis situation. He walked towards me and i tooka few steps back...

Ndile: Don't you ever in your whole life raise

your voice at me siyezwana? (do we understand each other)

Me: ngiyaxolisa (i am sorry)

Ndile: Is he the reason why you wanted us to break up?

Me: No

Ndile: For how long have you been dating him? Me: we not dating

Ndile: Ungangezi is'lima wena skhebereshendini! (don't make me a fool you whore)

Me: maybe we should talk when you have calmed down

I walked away and then he grabbed my arm and slapped me across the face..

Ndile: don't walk away when i am still talking to you!

He grabbed me and threw me on the bed, i was now crying. A few hours ago i was treated like a

queen by another man, and now i am treated like trash by my fiancé..

Ndile: uyang'nyanyisa! (you disgust me)He spat on me..

Him: All along you accusing me of cheating kanti it's you! You cheating on me!! (shouting)Dammit Lihle maan!!

I want him to stop with all these insults and shouting, i cannot take them he is putting me down more..

.

. YAYA

Lihle disappeared? I wonder what happened. I wonder what made her to disappear. Did Sandile tell her about me? What's really happening in their relationship right now because it seems as if like i am a threat to her. What more when Sandile has married me? I

laughed as i thought to myself. Let her act like this she is definitely going to drive him straight into my arms, he even looks like he is already tired of her..

I watched tv as I continued eating my ice cream,i cannot wait for Sandile to tell her about me. I wanna make her life very difficult, i wanna drive her crazy!

.

. KING

I wasn't supposed to be at the crime scene until tomorrow but i couldn't help myself, the captain was supposed to introduce me tomorrow morning and hand me my badge but that can wait i have a homicide case to solve. Lihle's fiancé i didn't like how he was talking to her, to me he came off as very abusive and controlling but unfortunately i cannot do anything until Lihle comes forward. It was me and the

forensics team, i was looking at that big blood stain in the middle of the room that was drying out. I walked around in the house to check a few things, it was very difficult to determine if they stole anything because there was no forced entry and no struggle.

Usually when the victim fights back you would find objects on the floor and everything but this victim in particular doesn't look like she fought back, or maybe she was overpowered. I crouched down as I played the whole scenario in my mind, she had no strength to fight them. If she broke loose then we was gonna have blood splattered around but it was only in one place which clearly indicated that she was held down she didn't have any chance to break loose..

I will have to question everyone including Lihle herself and i wanna know the relationship that Lihle's fiancé had with Lihle's Mother. Where they close? Did she accept him as her son in law? Did they have any altercations that

might've triggered him to commit such a crime? I have no doubt that this poor woman was targeted by someone close to her.

.

[09/28, 13:31] Ron: ¥30LIHLE

I woke up in the morning and I still had to carry the pain of my Mother's sudden passing and the reality of being an orphan. The reality of being alone. My Paternal family was never in the picture and my Mother's family on the other side we weren't very much close with them other than her Sister and a few others. Being 25 and not having a child of my own, and being in a lengthy relationship made some of my cousins to dislike me. They made me feel guilty about how I was raised and how I respected myself as to not change boyfriends faster than I change my underwear. I am not saying that I am better or perfect but self respect is what my Mother

taught me, and it is something that i lived by asto make both her and my Father proud. I was alone in the room as tears fell now there's going to be holidays that i will have to spend without her, my birthdays, Christmas, all those important holidays and special moments i will spend without her. She's never coming back, death holds no room for visitations in the otherworld. I wiped my tears as the door opened Sandile walked in he looked already prepared for work. On the other hand there's Sandile our relationship is taking a downward spiral and I don't even know what to do, I am breaking physically and emotionally. He exhaled and came to sit next to me, he ran his hand on my braids..

Him: I love you Lihle Cele with all my heart, i don't know what's happening to us but i don't like it

I didn't know what to say because this relationship is draining the last strength that i

have in me..

Him: Just tell me how to fix it and i will, tell me how to fix us and i will.

If i knew how to fix us i would tell him but i don't know..

Him: I am trying to be a better person, i wake up every day and i wanna be a better person but i cannot achieve that when you no longer with me. You stuck with me thus far and i want to continue this journey with you, i love you Lihle more than you think I love him too, i love him with my all but his love for me is somehow toxic. He is breaking me down more.

He put his hand under my chin and made me look at him with eyes still full of tears..

Him: let's try it one last time if it doesn't work then maybe just maybe we were not meant to be, i am asking for one last chance i don't

wanna lose you

Looking at him, starring deep into his sexy eyes they seem to validate what he is saying. He seems true with what he is saying, Lord why?

Why do i love him this much though? This guy hurt me before and he keeps on hurting me but i fail to let go. I fail to let go of the love that once existed between us and possibly still does. The truth is that I love him, i love him with all my heart..

It's only when I felt my lips getting wet i realized that he was kissing me, his hand gently squeezed my thigh. I was wearing his tshirt only since i didn't bring my pajamas with and he forced his hand in between my thighs. Am I that much broken to allow myself to be abused in this manner? Am i that much broken to forgive all that he has done and wanna give him another chance? Why? Why is it so easy to forgive when the physical connection is involved? Is this how one should live? Just a lot

of confusing thoughts. Before i knew it i was ontop of him and he was running his hands all over my skin, he was kissing me on my neck alldown to my chest. This time around he was handling me with care..

.

. KING

After the captain had introduced me the station was more welcoming than I had anticipated except for one Detective who didn't like me joining the team because now he sees me as a competition and a threat to the higher position, both me and him we will have to fight for that position of being captain sometime..

Cap: The station is very honoured to have you i have heard only the best about you

Me: I fully dedicate myself to what i do

He gave me a handshake. Detective Shongwe

came to us.. Him: welcome

He extended his hand to me for a handshake, i extended mine to him and they locked. He tightened the grip a little while giving me a disapproving look, i gave him a look of my own too..

Cap: Okay boys let's play it cool We broke the handshake...

Cap: both of you will be working on this homicide case

Shongwe looked at him..

Shongwe: You can't do that i deserve this case

Cap: i think both of you need to understand that you not in competition with each other and that you supposed to make a team

We looked at each other and then him.. Cap: We have more cold cases than solved

cases already our station has a bad reputation that's why i need both of you to change that and what better way than to have you two working on this case

Shongwe: but Cap..

Cap: I don't wanna hear it Shongwe you will just have to make it work

It's bad enough that we going to share an office, now we have to work together. The Captain walked out...

Shongwe folded his arms..

Him: Let's understand each other i am the best at what I do and i want you to stay out of my way! You can make yourself useful by going around and asking the neighbours if they heard or saw anything that night and leave the real investigation to me!

He pat me on my shoulder as he walked out, i stood there and chuckled while shaking my

head..

.

. YAYA

Before leaving for school i called my Mother totell her the good news.

Ma: Yaya why ufona ek'seni so? (why are youcalling so early)

Me: well i have good news

Ma: good news? I like good newsMe: I will be getting married soon

She kept quiet for a while...

Me: Ma?

Ma: getting married?

Me: Yes my boyfriend has asked me to marryhim

Ma: Wow Yaya! I.. Angikholwa yaz' (i can't

believe it)

Me: He is very rich Ma and i know that ill be ingood hands

Ma: Finally! La kule ndawo they will respect usnow other than always laughing at us

Me: I am very happy Ma

Ma: I am very happy for you my girl God hasblessed you

Me: he has..

Ma: Sizombona nini? (when are we going to seehim)

Me: Errr.. Beng'cabanga ukuthi nina nize ngapha(i was thinking that you guys should come this side)

Ma: serious?Me: Yebo Ma

Ma: I cannot wait Yaya you don't know proud iam of you

Me: Thank you Ma

Ma: Shine baby girl.. Shine!

Me: I have to go Ma i will call you againMa: Okay Nono bye

Now what's left is to tell Sandile about this, i want my Mother and my Grandmother to come visit me but i want us to stay over at his house because my flat is too small to accommodate all of us. At least if they come to visit this weekend..

.

. NDILE

For the first time ever Hlehle was more relaxed this time around she even allowed for me to do anything to her, she seemed to be enjoying herself than she usually does when our sex life used to be boring and always missionary. She allowed for me to stroke her hair, begged for

me to go harder was very unexpected and a bit of a shock. After our session i had to get dressed again and then go to work, i was already late. As I was driving i received a call from Big Daddy, and i answered.

Me: Big Daddy

Him: Sandile my man

Me: Glad to hear from you

Him: Just called to tell you that this weekend we in business Saturday and Sunday

Me: That sounds good

Him: I will pay you R30 000 upfront for those two days

Me: That's what i wanna hear Him: I will be in touch

Looks like my club is going to make me a lot of money.

.

To be continued [09/28, 18:35] Ron: ¥31LIHLE

Later on my Aunt and i went back to the house when the word was out that the Police have collected all the evidence and its no longer a crime scene. It was Me, My Aunt, MaKhumalo, and Karabo. My Aunt called most of our relatives and let them know so that they can come and help us mourn. Seeing that area on the floor that had her blood which was clean now haunted my mind, the blood was a lot they probably kept on stabbing her repeatedly even when she was bleeding alot. I wanna know how many times she was stabbed, i wanna know if she cried and begged for them to stop, i wanna know about her last moments alive. Why God?

Why couldn't you protect her after she had faithfully served you all these years? Didn't she deserve your hand to protect her? I don't know, i

don't know how it works..

Someone put their hands on my shoulders which brought me back to reality, i checked who it was and it was my friend Nomsa..

Her: Come Fikile is outside

We walked outside and she took out the bench so that we can sit and talk. Fikile walked up to me and hugged me, she was wearing her work uniform..

Fikile: How are you holding up? I shrugged my shoulders..

She helped me sit down.. Nomsa: I am very sorry friend

She held my hand while Fikile held my other hand..

Me: I am very sure that she begged and cried, she begged for her life and they didn't stop.

They went on and on, she must've been in so

much pain

Nomsa laid my head on her shoulder.. Nomsa: Please Hlehle don't do this to yourself
Me: They took my Mother away from me

Nomsa: I know.. I know sweetie

I was deeply hurt to a point where i was verymuch confused, i didn't know what was happening anymore..

.

. NDILE

The way that my job didn't matter to me anymore i kept on going out and taking minor smoking breaks, since i got here i have been stuck on some car that i should've finished withit 30min ago now but the lack of interest prevented me. I was outside busy smoking, i decided to call my Uncle while i was at it..

Uncle: Sandile

Me: Malume (Uncle) Uncle: Is everything okay?

Me: Everything is fine just that we were taken by MaCele's sudden passing

Uncle- Ewu! your Mother called me and told me I still cannot believe that she was stabbed to death

Me- It's shocking

Uncle- I am not at all shocked! It was meant to happen soon that woman used to talk a lot! She used to be very disrespectful the way she disrespected and looked down on our culture, Sies!

Me- Nami bekasaqala ukungicika vele (she was starting to annoy me too)

Uncle: A part of me is glad that she is gone
Me: I can finally have Lihle to myself

Uncle: Uyakanjani uLihle? (how is Lihle)

Me: Emotionally broken, naive, and stupid as always! This morning she couldn't wait to open her legs for me

Uncle: Sies! Her Mother is not even in her grave yet and already she is behaving this way! She should be mourning her Mother's death and not acting like this! She shouldn't even be sleeping at your house!

Me: I know but I want us to act now while she is still emotionally broken

Uncle: Sandile why don't you just move on? Leave this Cele girl alone

Me: I can't! I love her and I don't want her with anyone else
I sighed..

Me: Look Uncle Lihle's Aunt is a drunk with just R5000 we can get Lihle I want her to move in with me now probably next week Monday just

after the weekend of her Mother's funeral

Uncle: At least we don't have to waste money on Lobola for her i know her Aunt and Uncle are drunks they won't hesitate selling her to us over a couple of beers

Me: So Sunday we will go to her house and talk to the Aunt?

Uncle: How about Monday? Sunday they will still be busy

Me: Okay

Uncle: What about Lo Omunye? (what about the other one)

Me: You mean Yaya? She is my Queen and carrying my baby! She is in varsity she has her whole future planned out

Uncle: She sounds like she knows what she wants in life, that's someone you should marry not that trash!

Me: I cannot hurt Yaya anymore that's why i

want Lihle she is going to be my therapy

Uncle: do whatever you want with her she was never my favourite to even begin with

Me: I cannot wait for her Mothers funeral to pass she will see me for who i am!

Uncle: make her wish that she could've been buried with her Mother!

.

. KING

Me and the lieutenant that was going to help me with the case we drove up to the victim's house i needed to ask around, ask the neighbours if they didn't hear anything that night but right now i need the daughter to tell me a bit about the Fiance because my intuition strongly tells me that he might be involved somehow in this.

She was sitting outside on the bench alone

when we walked in, there was no life in her anymore she was drained. She couldn't even feel that it was a bit cold now, she was sitting there just staring down i had no doubt that she has cried a lot that her tears had dried out. I looked at the lieutenant..

Me: You can go inside i will be right there ask the family if they know anything or the people who the mother was close with

He nodded and went inside, i made my way to her. I stood in front of her and took off my jacket, i sat next to her and placed it over her shoulders. She looked at me..

Me: Hey Her: Hey

The jacket fell i picked it up and was about to place it again on her when i noticed a bite mark on her shoulder. I ran my finger there..

Me: what happened here?

She looked at it and rubbed herself.Her: Nothing
I held her hand and looked at her wrists she hadbruises which
weren't the ones caused by the handcuffs, these ones still looked
fresh..

Me: Is he doing this to you? She got her hand from my grip..Her:
No

Me: Is he is hurting you? Please tell meHer: He is not hurting me

Me: Your name is Lihle right?She nodded..

Me: Lihle i am talking to you as a Detective rightnow.. Are you
being abused?

Her: No

Me: Are you protecting him?She blew up..

Her: I am not being abused!!!! (shouting)

Me: Then explain these marks!! They didn't magically appear now did they??

Her: Leave me alone!!! Everyone just leave me alone!!! (shouting)

She stood up and walked away..

.

To be continued [09/28, 18:35] Ron: ¥32LIHLE

SATURDAY

The whole week i have been emotionally unstable i would cry more than 3 times a day i would shift away from reality and be in a world of my own, my mind felt as if like it was betraying me a great deal.

It's funny how things turn out the whole week iam crying and not able to cope but today the

last day when im supposed to say goodbye forever happens to be the day when tears fail me. From seeing her in her coffin, to the serviceat church, then to the cemetery i didn't even shed one tear. I was numb i couldn't feel any emotion whatsoever. Sandile has been very supportive this week prior to my Mother's funeral, he has been there for me every step of the way into making sure that I don't feel alone but even with him being here the void was still there. When we were at the cemetery i was surprised to see King, he actually came to attend the funeral with a few of his colleagues when i saw him standing there what came into my mind was to run to him and just have him hold me, have him hold me for a few minutes and never let go. I came back from that world offantasizing about him when i felt an arm aroundmy shoulders, it was Sandile. We just got back from the Cemetery and I didn't go inside the house i was just looking around hoping i would

see King but i didn't i didn't see him anywhere..Ndile: Are you alright?

I nodded..

Me: Yes i am alright

I was greatly disappointed at my Aunt i think she had something to drink before we left homethis morning to go to church for the service there way that she was behaving was inappropriate. From her breath i could even smell the whiskey, it's a shame that I will be leftwith her.

Ndile: Should i get you something to eat?Me: I am fine im not hungry

My Father's family disappointed me a lot onlyhis Sister showed up, the rest of the family didn't show up. From my Maternal side of the family they did show up, My Mother is Xhosa she was originally from Cape Town and only came to live here with my Father after they got

married..

Me: I will go and help around in the houseNdile: I will check on you later

He kissed me on my forehead..Him: I love you

Me: I love you too

He walked away and i went inside the house..

.

. YAYA

Lihle was once the queen but it seems like i am taking the crown from her now. Sandile did allow for my Grandmother and my Mother to come and visit, they arrived yesterday and we were staying over at his house. The old Sandile would never allow for this to happen but the new Sandile just gives me everything that i want...

I was at the kitchen preparing breakfast for them when I received a call from Sandile...

Me: Hey Honey Him: Peaches

I giggled..

Him: It's a good name to attach to your sudden brightening of complexion

Me: It's a sweet name

I put him on loud speaker.. Me: How was the funeral? Him:

Devastating

Me: and Lihle?

Him: Lihle looks drained she is walking but deep inside she is dead she has no life

Me: I feel sad for her Him: It is a sad situation

Me: I don't hate Lihle and I hope the person or

people responsible for her Mother's death could be found and hanged

Him: Oookay wenzani lapho? (what are you doing there)

Me: Making breakfast for my Mother and Grandmother

Him: How are they finding the place? Me: They happy to be here

Him: Im glad

Me: So Lihle is moving in on Monday?

Him: Yes and you will be moving in a week later

Me: Can't i just stay in my flat? I don't want to step in her toes

Him: I want her to accept you and learn to live with you, how is that going to happen when you live in your flat?

I exhaled..

Me: I thought I was going to move in after the

wedding

Him: You moving in just for a few weeksMe: Okay then

Him: I have to go i love youMe: I love you too

Lihle is going to die when she learns that i amalso moving in..

.

. LIHLE

I went to chill with Nomsa and Fikile at the pub&grill that was at the corner of our street i needed to be away from home and my irritatingdrunk Aunt together with her husband. They were having a couple of drinks and eating grilled meat, we were chilling with Nomsa's Minister of finance and his friends.

Nomsa: Lihle are you sure that you should be

drinking?

Me: After tears

Fikile: How are you feeling? I shrugged my shoulders..

Me: I really don't know

My phone rang it was my Aunt, i took it and went to answer it outside.

Me: Aunty?

Her: ukuphi? (where are you) Me: Just around

Her: Buya (come back) Me: Why?

Her: Sandile's Uncle is here we need to discuss a way forward

Me: Really Aunty? My Mother just got buried today and already you wanna sell me to Sandile's family

Her: awuyeke ukuba nehaba (stopexaggerating)

Me: Sandile is not a Saint i don't wanna marryhim

Her: Manje uyahlanya! (now you are crazy)I hung up and went back to my friends..

Fikile: Everything okay?Me: Everything is fine

.

. NDILE

We were all waiting for Lihle it has been an hournow and she was still not here..

Uncle: Kanti ukuphi? (where is she)

Lihle's Aunt: When I called uthe she is on herway

Lihle's Grandma: I still say this is not a good

idea nothing about this is right.

Lihle's Aunt: She has to go and live with her inlaws

Uncle: It's not like we just taking her we are asking for her

Lihle's Aunt: Plus she has no one and has nothing anymore Sandile is going to take care of her and possibly put her through school she should be grateful

I looked at the time...

Me: I will go and look for her

Lihle's Aunt: Kodwa uLihle uyasihlaza! (Lihle is embarrassing us)

Lihle's Grandma: What do you expect? Her Mother just got buried and now you getting rid of her

Lihle's Aunt: Kudala uLihle noSandile bethandana nje (they have been dating for a long time) i don't see anything wrong with this

I walked out to my car pissed as hell i hope she is not with that Detective!

.

To be continued [09/28, 18:36] Ron: ¥33LIHLE

I am not a frequent drinker i have always restrained from alcohol because when i am drunk i don't know how to act. I tend to do things or say things that are offensive to someone else or embarrassing to myself hence i have taken a decision to stay away from alcohol until today. I really needed to be drifted away from reality for a while and what better way than alcohol?

I had Fikile walk me home when I was starting to cause drama at the pub & grill, her walking me home wasn't a smooth walk because I was being too much on the streets. It only came

now to hit me hard that my Mother was gone, she was gone forever and I wasn't going to see her ever again. I don't think most people know the pain of losing someone close to your heart, i was just trying to realize my dreams when she left and now i don't even know where to move on from here. The pain of losing a Mother cuts deeper than any pain i have ever known or went through, i mean not long ago i lost my baby, my relationship turned into thrown out bread crumbs and now Mom is gone! Why? Why so much pain? God if you have trusted me with this pain know i cannot handle it. It's too much i am drowning. I sat down on the side of the street in the pedestrian walk..

Fikile: Lihle No.. No.. No you are going to attract eyes on yourself and I see Buhle chilling on the grass with her friends they going to make a mockery out of you

Fikile was saying that as if like i cared, but honestly I didn't care. I didn't care about

anything all i cared about was to have followed my Mother to the grave. I looked at her as she stood in front of me with tears burning my eyes..

Me: I don't care!

Fikile: Okay let's go home and you cannot care there

Tears fell warming my cheeks and i got a clear view of what she was doing, and right now she was looking around hoping no one was seeing us..

Fikile: Come on babe

She offered me a hand and i stood up then we continued walking, i was out of it. I kept on stumbling around when my right leg went first, my left leg didn't know where to go. I stopped and just glanced down smiling with my shawl falling, why I was smiling with tears drying on my cheeks? I didn't know but alcohol can make one a fool..

We walked up until we passed Buhle and her friends, as soon as we passed them they were quiet and looking at us. I stopped and at that instant I felt like saying something. Fikile held my hand as I looked at them but my eye balls were just disoriented and running around..

Me: Yes I am drunk Buhle make fun of me!!!

She didn't say anything but had a smirk on her face, her friends laughed..

Me: Yes laugh that.. That.. Laugh at Lihle drunk!.. Her mother just passed on.. And.. And.. And her fiancé cheated on her with a yellow bone!! Now she.. has.. She.. She is.. She has turned into alcohol please laugh..

My speech was disoriented, I was stuttering..

Fikile tried to pull me so we continued walking but I fell and with so much alcohol in my system I laid down there as they laughed and clapped hands..

Buhle: do i really have to say something? Look at her she's a joke! Sdakwa ndini!! (such a drunk)i wish and hope that Sandile sees you now in this state!! The embarrassment you bringing him..

Me: Voetsek!! Mqunduwakho (cussing)They continued laughing..

Buhle: Having a drunk for a wife how i feel sorryfor him!!

I wanted to say more to her but i was completely out of it, i was beginning to pass outon that road..

.

. KING

Lihle's Mom's funeral was just heartbreaking alot of people seemed to be greatly affected byher passing. I didn't know half of them but i think they were closed friends and family..

Seeing Lihle just got to me, she was beyond the word "Broken" that beautiful dark skinned girl looking at her she had no life left in her, she was done. She had to accept her Mother's brutal murder and i have no doubt that she is being abused, all those bruises on her wrists i know it's bondage and looking at Lihle she is not a girl who fantasies on that. I am very sure the fiancé is abusing her physically and sexually on top of the pain that she is already feeling of losing her parent in that brutal manner he is inflicting more. She is so much in pain that nothing makes sense to her, i don't even think she knows what day it is. If i could I would carry all of her pain for her, she has been through a lot...

I was back at the station reviewing her Mother's case, with not so much evidence it's really difficult to go on with it and solve it, but i made a promise to her and i will solve this case. I still have my suspicions on the fiancé, with my

theory i think Lihle's Mother somehow found out that her fiancé was abusing her and she somehow wanted to do something about it but the fiancé silenced her forever..

I tossed the file across the table to the lieutenant, he looked at me..

Me: Get me something on Lihle's fiancé Him: Lihle's fiancé?

Me: The deceased's daughter her fiancé i have no doubt he is involved in the murder

He nodded..

Me: Don't tell Shongwe Him: I won't

My sister was involved in a very abusive relationship maybe i can have her talk to Lihle..

.

. YAYA

My Mother and i we were watching TV and myGrandmother was asleep.

Mom: Yaya yintle lendlu (Yaya this house isbeautiful)

Me: Kakhulu Ma (too much Ma)

I don't wanna tell Mom that I am in a polygamy marriage i am very adamant to eliminate Lihle from the picture. I wanna be the friendly sister wife to her, treat her with respect etc i wanna make her the evil one. If she pushes me away orbecomes rude Sandile will get irritated and angry, i wanna be an Angel and act very kind to her just to reveal her as the devil..

Ma: Yaya..Yaya.. Yaya!!

I snapped out of it and looked at her.

Ma: So Umkhwenyana uzosambisa k'sasa? (willour groom take drive us home tomorrow)

I wanted them to take a taxi to home the sameway as how they came, i am not ready to show

Sandile were i live. What if he loses respect forme? I am truly embarrassed to show him my poverty..

.

[09/28, 18:36] Ron: ¥34LIHLE

I got home with Fikile and only a few relatives were still around the house, it was a bit late andi was still very much drunk. We walked to the bedroom where everyone was sitting and my Aunt looked at me for a while..

Her: Langelihle uphumaphi? (Where are youcoming)

I threw myself on the chair, as always i had noshoes on i don't know where i left them..

Aunt: Is she drunk?

Fikile: we were at the pub and she did have afew

Grams: Ohh uSana lwam' Thixo! Aunt: Lihle! What's wrong with you?

I chuckled as the floor appeared three times, my vision was blurry.

Aunt: Lihle uyihlazo yazi!(you are an embarrassment) Imagine if Sandile's Uncle was still here! Besizothini kodwa? (what were we going to say)

The picture of King kept playing in my mind, his beautiful wide smile, his sexy upper body, the way he looks at me he is not scared to just look at me which sends butterflies in my Stomach.

He is so caring, loving, gentle, warm-hearted. He is the type that would sweep you off your feet, the type that would stay up with you at night when you sick, King is so perfect. He is so perfect that it's scary...

Aunt: Sizothini mara? (what are we going to say)

My cousin walked in, My Aunt's daughter. We almost the same age but she dropped out of school in grade 10 and she has two kids. The baby daddies aren't working so they not sending her money, she's dependent on her Parents and Sassa..

Her: Mama ngicale iR100 bandla (Mama can i please have R100)

Aunt: Eyy Nokuthula cela kuyise (go and ask your Father)

Her: but..

Aunt: Nokuthula i am very stressed i have to deal with your cousin right now

There was silence for a while.. Nokuthula: And then? Is Lihle drunk? Aunt: Cabanga (imagine)

She clapped her hands and laughed. Nokuthula: Her Mother used to make her better

than us but look at her, her Mom is not even in her grave for two days but Lihle is already a drunk! Things change

Grams: Nokuthula...

Nokuthula: It's true! This is only the beginning We heard a car pulling up..

Me: Is that King?

Nokuthula went to peep through the window... Aunt: ubani? Who is it?

Nokuthula: wait...

Aunt: Nokuthula ubani? (who is it) Nokuthula: uSandile

Aunt: kodwa Sizothini (what are we going to say)

Nokuthula laughed again....

Nokuthula: Asazi (we don't know) Fikile put her hand on my shoulder.

Nokuthula: This i have to see

We waited for Sandile until he came andknocked at the door..

Aunt: Come inHe walked in...

He looked at me...

Ndile: When did she come back?Aunt: Not so long ago

Ndile: Is she drunk?

Aunt: Kusho khona (It seems that way)I looked at Fikile..

Me: Have you called King?Fikile: King?

Me: Detective King? He works at the same station as you

Aunt: Lihle!!!

Ndile: Eyy Ng'cela ukumthatha Ma (can i please

take her)

Aunt: Siyaxolisa Sandile yazi (we are very sorry)

Ndile: It's fine i understand she just lost her Mother and everything is just not making sense to her

Grams: She loved her Mother soo much she won't recover anytime soon

Ndile: It's fine can someone pack her clothes? I think it's better if she permanently moves in with me

Aunt: of cause uzayeka ukudakwa (she will stop drinking)

Nokuthula: Lihle is very lucky some of us want such guys like Sandile yena she's playing with him aii!!

Aunt: I'll go and pack for her

Sandile came and helped me to get up..Ndile: Come let's go

He picked me up and walked out to his car, he opened the door and put me in then closed it..

I heard him talking to my Aunt and Cousin and Fikile then after he got in and started driving, i passed out..

.

. KING

I was on the phone with my sister. Her: I was just preparing to go to bed
Me: sorry if i disturbed you

Her: is everything okay? Me: Everything is Fine Her: don't lie
I exhaled..

Me: I need your advice on something Her: Talk to me

Me: There's this girlHer: a girl?

Me: Don't think of it that wayHer: What about her?

Me: The homicide case that i am working on its her Mom that was murdered

Her: That's sad

Me: I have reason to believe that she is being abused by her Fiancé

Her: That's tragic losing her Mother and being abused that's too much for a person to go through

Me: I know and I wanna help her but i don't know how

Her: Has she come forward?Me: No

Her: King you know that you cannot help until she comes forward

Me: I know but there's something that i can do
Her: It seems like she means a lot to you

Me: Don't be insane

Her: don't do anything that you going to regret
Me: I won't

Her: I'll call you tomorrow
Me: Good night i love you
Her: I love you too

I hung up..

.

. LIHLE

I felt something cold being poured on me, i quickly snapped out of it and woke up. I looked around and i was in a room that i didn't recognize Sandile was standing right in front of me he didn't look happy..

I wiped the water from my face i was still drunkbut not that much.
He took off his jacket..

Him: Tonight i will teach you a lesson that youwill never forget
he folded his shirt..

Him: Don't worry i won't touch your face it's tooprecious
I was on the floor and i started movingbackwards..

Him: You can scream all you want no one is going to hear you, not
even your Precious King!

He came closer and started kicking me hard, icouldn't move or
escape he had trapped me against the corner of the room..

Him: You will stop seeing this King of yours!!Ung'jwayela kabi
Lihle!

All i could do was scream hoping that he would

stop..

Me: I am sorry..

.

. KING

"Please save my Daughter".. "Please save my Daughter"

I immediately opened my eyes to the sound of that shaky voice. I looked around the room I was alone, i had fallen asleep while reviewing the homicide case. I got up and went to drink water at the kitchen, i did hear something. A voice of a Woman sounded like she was crying..

.

[09/28, 18:37] Ron: ¥35KING

The following day it was a Sunday and i wasn't

supposed to be at the station but i went either way. It's a way of keeping myself busy from getting bored, i haven't made any friends aroundhere so what better way than to keep myself busy with work. The homicide case was gettinga bit steeper, i had no much evidence to go about this doesn't seem like a work of an amateur. I got to the station and Cap was in my office, hewas with Shongwe. I wonder what Shongwe is doing here too. I walked in and greeted them..

Cap: How is the homicide case coming along?Me: Still getting there

Shongwe chuckled.. Cap: anything so far?Me: No

Shongwe: And surprisingly you supposed to bethe best at what you do

Me: What is that supposed to mean?

Cap: don't start boys I sat down..

Cap: Shongwe produced the murder weapon I looked at Shongwe..

Shongwe: The killers were not smart they disposed it in the trash bin outside

Me: fingerprints?

Cap: Still testing for any fingerprints Me: I see

Shongwe: If we find prints then i would've solved the case

I started clapping.. Me: congratulations

Cap: I want you guys to work with someone i have a lieutenant that can be of help in this case

Me: Who?

Cap: lieutenant Fikile Ngwenya she is friends with the deceased's daughter

Shongwe: No thank you i don't work with Amateurs i won't use her

Cap looked at me..

Me: It's fine i can use her

Honestly i don't need her too but hearing that she is Lihle's friend might just help me..

Cap: she is at the front certifying documents if any of you need her

Shongwe: If Nkambule needs her

Cap: Take the day off gentlemen you did pretty good with the murder weapon

Shongwe: I did well

Cap: It's a team work Shongwe learn to work with others

He walked away. I am going to let Shongwe path himself on the back for now, i will allow him to

feel victorious until i strike..

.

. LIHLE

My whole body was aching when i moved i would inflict pain on myself. I am even surprised that I pulled through, i thought Sandile was going to kill me last night..

I was now laid in bed with a duvet covering me, tears kept on falling. Why me? Why soo much pain? Take my life now Lord, i would trade my life with someone else who really needs it. I turned around slowly and i noticed that he wasn't around, i was all alone. I tried to sit up straight only to realize that my ankle had a ropethat extended to the leg of the bed, he had tied me so that i don't escape. I looked next to me and I saw fruits, scones, and a bottle of wine. There was a note too ontop. I slowly got out ofbed and made my way to get the note, i read it:

"you will eat this until I come back, don't thank me that much although it was very difficult getting you the wine on a Sunday but since you turning into an alcoholic there's nothing i can do but find your addiction, because that's what you are now an alcoholic. You will use the bucket as a toilet"

Why is Sandile doing this to me? If he no longer loves me why not just let me go than torturing me like this

.

. YAYA

Sandile and i we were driving my Mother and my Grandmother to the bus station, i would've had him drive them directly at home but i am not ready for him to see where i come from. He knows that I come from a poverty-stricken background but having him see it i am not ready..

He gave them R2 000 in cash my Mother couldn't stop thanking him, i have never seen her that happy. We bid them farewell and went back to the car..

Me: Thank you for everything He smiled at me..

Him: You are welcome Me: So did you find Lihle?

His facial expression changed..Him: Yes

Me: and?

Him: and what? She's fine!Me: okay

He put his hand on my tummy while his otherhand was on the wheel..

Him: Sorry i didn't mean to snapMe: It's fine

Him: should we fetch some of your clothes from your apartment?

Me: we can

He kept quiet for a while..

Him: I'll make sure Lihle moves in tonight too Me: soo soon?

Him: Yes so soon

Are we going to survive staying under the same roof together?

.

. KING

I drove to Lihle's house i wanted to see how she was holding up, the last time i saw her she was in a very bad space. I didn't take Fikile along i was alone, it's my day off i am just going there as a friend to see how she is holding up..

When i got there, her family was busy cleaning

and washing blankets. I greeted..Her Aunt was the one who came up to me, she looked drunk..

Her: Detective Me: How are you?

Her: Siyancenga (we are getting there)Me: Again i am sorry for your loss Her: hai we will pull through

Me: that's good to hear.. Is Lihle around? Her: No umfunelani? (why do you want her)

Me: I just wanted to know how she is holding up

Her: Detective sorry but Lihle has a fiancéMe: I know b..

I heard the same voice that i heard Last night coming from inside the house..

"I saw his eyes.. I know his eyes"

I closed my eyes and opened them.

Aunt: Detective?

"I saw his eyes.. I know his eyes"

Me: excuse me can i go inside the house?Her: Why?

I walked inside following the sound of the voice which led me straight to the spot where she was murdered. Although it was clean but her blood was still crying for justice....

I crouched down and ran my fingers over her body as it lay..

"I saw his eyes.. I know his eyes"

Something hit me.. I think i know how to solve this case..

.

[09/28, 18:37] Ron: ¥36KING

I went to the nearby Pub&grill got myself a meal and something to drink. I had my laptop with

and I was busy laying out everything with regards to this Homicide case, the voice i was hearing was real and if i am not mistaken it's safe to say that Lihle's Mother was actually helping me to solve the case. I am not a firm believer in the supernatural but the voice that i kept on hearing, it was not doubt real. What came into my mind as the voice kept on playing in my head was that the killer's face was the last face she saw before dying. So optography will definitely work here, i once used it before in some homicide case back at home..

An optography is basically the process of retrieving the last image that the eye saw before the person died, the image is retrieved from the retina of the eye. I need to tell the Captain about this and also i need to talk to Lihle about it and her family so that they can allow us to exhume her Mother's body. I laid back on the chair all smiling, why didn't I think of this from the start?

. LIHLE

I went for the wine and drank it i needed something to numb my pain and i needed something to drift me away from reality for a while. It is now becoming very difficult for me to face life sober minded, it's crashing down on me in a very painful way. It's too much i am suffocating, i cannot do this anymore. I wasn't drunk i was just tipsy but nevertheless it relaxed me it helped me to not think that much.

The door opened and Sandile walked in, i was sitting on the floor with my back against the bed. He closed the door and came to me, he crouched in front of me. He put his hand under my chin and lifted my face up so he can look at me, after a few seconds he shifted his eyes from me and saw the bottle tossed across the room..

Him: Let's get one thing straight I looked at him..

Him: The old Sandile that used to beg you he is gone!

I realized that already..

Him: Lihle i am capable of the most cruel things on this earth don't test me! You do not know how far i can go

Me: I thought you loved me

He wiped my tears as they fell..

Him: I do love you more than you think everything that i have done so far is because i love you!

I laughed and faced the other way.

Me: You have a really funny way of showing it He forcefully made me to face him again..

Him: do you think this is a joke?

He slapped me across the face..

Him: Tell me something did you fuck him?

Me: I have never slept with anyone other than you

Him: Why don't i believe you? I kept quiet..

He leaned forward and whispered in my ear and grabbed my braids..

Him: I am going to kill you Lihle just like i killed your Mom!!

That came as a big shock, he looked at me with a smirk on his face..

Me: What are you talking about?

Him: I told you Nana I am capable of a lot of things, bad things!

I cannot believe what Sandile just confessed to me, i was overwhelmed with shock..

Him: You are going to be a good fiancé if you

run away i will find you, if you try anything i will kill you! Talk to King again i will kill both you and you know what's the saddest thing? I will get away with it wanna know why? I have a mental disorder remember? I am no longer on medication the judge will just order me to go to a mental institution since I was "unfit" when i committed the crime

Tears were burning my eyes, my lower lip was trembling..

Him: What we going to do now is have the most heated sex ever!

He put his thumb on my lower lip and pulled it down a little to reveal my teeth

Him: Since you fantasize about him a lot you are going to ride me as how you would ride him! You are going to beg me to fuck you as how he would fuck you!

I blinked and my tears fell..

He got up and started taking his clothes off, he was completely naked and sat on the bed while giving himself a hand job..

Him: Come my black doll, we don't have the whole day!

The abuse that his Father put them through must have really damaged him, it damaged him mentally and i don't think he is going to come back from this..

.

. YAYA

I was back at the house i was putting my clothes in the other room, Sandile didn't want me to occupy the main bedroom said that's were Lihle is supposed to sleep..

So Lihle is still his Queen but not for long, soon I will be ruling. I sat down on the bed and truthfully speaking i don't know if this baby

belongs to Sandile or Nkabinde, the last time Nkabinde and i had sex he was drunk so he doesn't quite recall that we didn't use a condom and i keep on lying to him that we used one while we didn't..

.

[09/28, 18:38] Ron: Stories Broken down

¥37

LIHLE

After that shameful act later on we prepared to leave it's only then when i realized that we were in some Motel. My whole body was aching, my cookie was on fire i don't know what Animal Sandile was. As we were driving to our destination i kept on looking at him and wondered to myself how can a human being be so evil? He is not a human being. He cannot be a human being! I refuse to believe that. I turned

my head and stared outside the window with tears falling i cannot find the strength, i cannot find the strength to move on. I am beyond broken i cannot find life deep within me, only my flesh is living but my soul went to the grave with my Mother. I wish upon me death, death has to be easy because life is very much difficult.....

We arrived at the house he went out first and opened the trunk, i opened the door and got out..

Ndile: Welcome home

He took out my luggage bag..Ndile: Come

He held my hand and we made our way in. He opened the kitchen door and i could hear that the tv was on, i looked around at the kitchen and i saw pots boiling on the stove peeled and diced carrots together with a diced onion and Green pepper on the cutting board.

What was

happening?

We made our way to the Lounge with my heartbeating fast, Lord let it be not what I think it is. We got to the lounge and i saw this girl laying back on the couch watching tv with a pillow underneath her feet, one was supporting her head. She had her hand running on her tummy..

I looked at Sandile and let go of his hand..Me: What is going on?
He put my bag down..

Him: Meet Yaya and Yaya this is Lihle

Yaya stood up with a big smile on her face..Yaya: I have heard a lot about you Lihle

Me: I haven't heard anything about you We both looked at Sandile..

Him: Yaya is going to be my second wife she has been the girl i was secretly seeing for a while now

Was i hearing that right?Me: What?

Him: She is pregnant with my baby

Yaya was standing there still running her hand on her small bump, i just wanted to grab her throat and choke her to death!..

Me: Sandile what exactly am I doing here?He put his hands in his pockets..

Him: Nana this is going to be your new life, our new life. Yaya is a good person she will respect you as long as you going to respect her too

I have shared Sandile with Buhle, i have shared him with probably a lot of girls while he was at school and now i need to share him with this girl too? I can't. I want my man to myself i want him to love me only, i want him to come home to me only! I don't believe in polygamy and I am not going to start now..

Yaya: let me go and check on the pots

She walked away. She is pretty too, a bit lightskinned with a slim body.

Me: I can't Sandile.. I won't do this

I tried walking away but he grabbed me by mybraids..

Him: You are going to do this! You don't have achoice

Me: Just leave me alone! You don't love me anymore be with her and leave me alone!!

There's a man out there who is going to loveme

That pissed him off he threw me across thefloor..

Him: I am going to kill you!

He walked away. He caused me a lot of pain when he threw me on the floor but this time around i didn't cry, i had no tears for him. I am not going to cry for him! He came back while I was still trying to get up from the floor he had a

gun with him and he pointed it at me.. Him: You wanna die Lihle?
Ufuna ukufa?

I turned and looked at him and in my heart i just said those words
"Pull the trigger.. Kill me already i don't care". He was so angry
that his hand was shaking, he was ready to pull that trigger..

Yaya walked in..

Him: You think i am going to let you go to him? Unyanya yezwa?
You are mine Lihle! You belong with me!!

Yaya: Ndile hlisa umoya (calm down)

Yaya walked up to him and tried to touch him but he pushed her and
Yaya fell..

Him: You see what you made me do?

He lowered the gun and clicked his tongue..

Him: Get your shit together! Or you going to die for him! Uzomfela!

He walked away.. After a few seconds we heard the kitchen door banging, we kept quiet for a while.

Yaya stood up and came to me she tried helping me to get up..

Me: don't touch me!

Her: Ngizama ukukunceda (i am trying to help you)

Me: for what? We not friends! She rolled her eyes..

I got up and made my way to the bedroom i heard her making slight comments behind my back, if only i wasn't in so much pain i would strangle her..

.

. NDILE

I was so pissed i don't know why Lihle is doing

this to me. Thinking of her and this Detective makes me go out of my mind, i cannot imagine her with another man. Just for that i wanna break her, i wanna break her soo much that she hates every man that comes her way. I want her to be with me only and no one else..

.

. KING

Before driving back to the lodge i went to the station and Fikile was still there, just the person i wanted to see..

Me: Hey

Her: Detective

Me: Let's take a ride

She got out of the booth and came we went to my car..

Me: I heard the Cap want you to work with us?

Her: That's correct

Me: and i heard you are Lihle's close friend?Her: one of her best friends

Me: Can you tell me more about her fiancé?She laughed..

Me: I didn't know that i pulled a jokeHer: You didn't

Me: Then what's funny?

Her: You Detective King Nkambule neh?Me: Yes

Her: What's going on between you and Lihle?Me: Why?

Her: She has been asking about youMe: When?

Her: Last night are you two seeing each other?Me: No we just friends

Her: You know she's engaged right?Me: I know very well

Her: Then what are you doing?

Me: I have every reason to believe that her fiancé is abusing her

Her: Who? Sandile? Never!Me: That was a quick reply

Her: Sandile is everything yes but he will never abuse Lihle he loves her too much to do that..They have been together for a very long time

Me: I see

.

. LIHLE

When i was going through my things i was relieved to see that my Aunt had put my phone inside, i took it and called 10111, i asked for them to transfer the call to our local police

station and they did..

Voice: Lieutenant Ngcobo speaking Me: Hi..

Him: Can i help you?

Me: Can i please talk to Detective Nkambule..King Nkambule

Him: He just left can i take a message? Me: Can i have his phone number?

Him: Err..can i help you with Something Mam'? Me: Just tell him Lihle called

Him: Lihle?

Me: Yes my number is 0846553211 Him: Okay i will give him

Me: Thank you I hung up..

[09/28, 18:39] Ron: ¥38

KING

After our drive later i went and dropped Fikile at the station, it was now around 17:00 just wanted to go to the lodge shower and then sleep a bit. Tomorrow morning i wanna let Capin on the Optography i wanna talk to Lihle about exhuming her Mother's body and not her alcoholic Aunt, i really owe it to her to solve this case. When I was about to drive to the Lodge one of the Lieutenants ran up to my car..

Him: Detective Me: Yes

Him: I have a message for you He gave me a piece of paper..

Him: She called and said you should call her back

Me: Okay thanks

I checked and it was Lihle's number, i took my cell and called her..

At first she didn't pick up, i tried her a few times until she eventually did.

Her: Hello

Me: Hey It's King

Her: I am so glad that you called Her voice was breaking..

Me: Lihle are you okay? Her: No.. He hits me King Me: What?

Her: Sandile he is going to kill me.. He has confessed to killing my Mother and now he is going to kill me!!

I started my car.. Me: Where are you?

Her: I am scared King.. Me: Tell me where you are

She couldn't speak anymore she broke down..

Me: Little tell me where you are! Her: I.. I..

Me: I cannot help you if you don't tell me where you are

Her: I am at..

She cleared her throat and gave me the address..

Me: Where is he? Her: He is not around

Me: I want you to lock yourself in the bedroom and i will be there

Her: He has a gun King he is going to shoot me!

Me: He is not going to shoot you..

Her: He is here i can hear him talking.. He is going to kill me King
please help me (crying)

She hung up. If i call her back i might put her more in danger, it's
best i try to get there in time

to save her..

Me: I am going to kill him..I swear to God i amgoing to kill him!!

.

. NDILE

I drove around the neighborhood just to calm myself down now i was back at the house. Firstthing I did was to check up on Lihle and she was peacefully sleeping on the bed, i slowly closed the door as to not wake her up and then iwent to join Yaya on the couch. I put my hand on her tummy..

Me: I hope i didn't hurt you

I leaned over and kissed her tummy, she put herhand on the back of my head..

Her: We are fine

I got up and kissed her..

Me: I am sorry i didn't mean to push you like that
She put her hand on my cheek..

Her: You scared me there a little, i thought you were going to kill
her

Me: Lihle and i we haven't been good lately Her: I noticed

Me: But i will fix it

Her: I hope so i hate seeing you like that

I put my head back on her tummy and she ran her hand on my head..

.

. LIHLE

I was laying on the bed and praying that King comes through for
me he is my only hope, at least he is a cop and maybe just maybe he
can bring Sandile down. I had put my phone on

vibration and i wasn't receiving any call from him, not even a message i just hope he is on his way. My phone vibrated it scared me a little, it was a text from him..

"I am outside if you still there reply to this message then i will come in"

That was a big relief..I replied back..

"I am here"

I got up from the bed and put on my flops, i took my phone and went out of the bedroom. Yaya and Sandile were sitting on the couch looking all sorts of "in love", Sandile raised his head up when he saw me..

Him: Lihle

I was waiting for King to come in, Please come in..

He got up from the couch and made his way to me, i stepped back..

Him: I am not going to hurt you baby i justwanna talk

Yaya: Sandile.. Him: Not now Yaya!

He looked at me and tried to touch me..

Him: I am so sorry i didn't mean to hurt you.. Ilove you Lihle please..

I didn't say nothing to him my heart was beatingso fast i thought it was going to beat out of mychest..

Him: Lihle..

I heard a voice behind him..Voice: Get away from here!

It was King, i literally closed my eyes and putmy hand on the wall to balance myself fromfalling..

Sandile turned around and looked at King..Sandile: What the hell are you doing in my

house?

King Charged at Sandile and started beating him up, he punched him hard that Sandile fell..

Me: King No!!

King just went for him he punched him and punched him while he was down, giving Sandileno chance to fight back..

Yaya: Ohhhh my word uzombulala! (he is going to kill him)

Me: King leave him he is not worth it!!! King just continued beating him..

I went to him and tried to get him off Sandile, He stopped and got up his hand had a lot of blood..

King: If you ever come anywhere near her i will kill you!!!!

I pulled him by his tshirt.. Me: Let's just go

Yaya went to kneel next to Sandile who was coughing up blood...

Yaya: Sandile?.. Baby can you hear me?She looked at me..

Yaya: You are so evil!!! You claiming to love this man but now you have him beaten up by your boyfriend sies Lihle!!!!

I looked at King..

Me: Let's just go please

We walked out to the car, before we got inside i hugged him tight with tears falling i was even shaking..

Me: Thank you

He tried hugging me back but i flinched in pain..Him: Are you okay?

He broke the hug..

Me: Just a few bruises

Him: Let me see He lifted my shirt..Him: what the???

I pulled my shirt down..

Him: I should take you to the DoctorMe: No please..

Him: Lihle..

Me: King please let's get out of here i just wanna be in your arms for a few hours.. I wannafeel safe in your arms

Him: Okay let's go

He opened the door for me and i went in.. Hegot in the other side and started the car. I gotcloser and put my head on his shoulder, i justdidn't wanna let him go. He tilted his a bit to mine..

Him: You safe now

That's all i wanted to hear...

.

To be continued

...

[09/28, 18:46] Ron: ¥39LIHLE

I ended up going to the hospital for King's sake i had no doubt in my mind that Sandile might open an assault case against King, so when that happens i would've laid charges against him too. I don't want King going to jail and leaving me stranded i can't even go home because of how my Aunt is it's very clear that she is on Sandile's side. King has been in a mood of his own ever since we got here that wide beautiful smile of his had disappeared he was full of rage. He was outside the ward on his phone i couldn't hear what he was saying but from the gestures and his expression, he was giving the person on the other side of the phone his piece of mind. I hope i didn't get myself into

another Sandile. I was sitting on the bed i was with the Doctor and the Nurse, i had just given them my statement the events of what happened. I was talking and the Nurse was writing, i was so traumatized that i couldn't evenhold a pen..

Dr: Is it painful when i squeeze here?

My mind was on King, i was concentrating onhim..

Dr: Miss Cele

I looked at him..

Dr: Do you feel pain when i do this?Me: Just a little

Dr: Lucky you got away without broken bones with the pain killers and the ointment you should be fine in a few days, there's no sign thatyou bleeding internally

I pulled my shirt down..

Me: Thank you

King walked back in..King: How is she?

Dr: She's going to be fine ill give her painkillers

Nurse: She has given us her statement with regards to the physical abuse she suffered inthe hands of her fiancé i will go and call the police

King: I am the Police you can give it to meThe Nurse looked at him..

King: I am Detective Nkambule

He showed her his badge, the Nurse gave himmy statement and he went through it..

After a while he looked at me..

King: I don't see any sexual abuse written here?Nurse: She didn't touch on that

The Dr looked at me..

Him: Where you sexually abused too?

King was still looking at me. I am not trying to protect Sandile with the sexual abuse but how do you begin to tell that our latest sexual encounter he wanted us to fantasize about King? Him being on top of me forcing me to scream King's name instead of his? It's a sickening experience..

Me: He didn't violate me sexually all our sexual encounters i gave myself to him willingly

King raised his eyebrow clearly giving me a disapproving look..

Dr: I will go and get your painkillers and everything else but please come back after a few weeks for a check up

I nodded..

.

. YAYA

Ndile refused to go to the Hospital instead he had me call Nkabinde to come over and check him. For a moment there i was very scared i thought that guy was going to kill him, there way he was going on and how Sandile laid theretaking all the beatings my heart stopped for a while. If Anything happens to Sandile what's going to become of me? My Mom is going to swear at me and everything, I will be forced to drop out and go back home to add an extra mouth ontop of all the mouths that my Grandmother is feeding with her monthly pension money that's not enough. Getting guys like Sandile is a bit difficult, some would refuse to pay my fees and everything i cannot go back to the life of poverty...
Nkabinde: You have to go to the Hospital
Sandile: Never!
I don't know why he was being stubborn about this whole thing...

Ndile: Are you done?Nkabinde: Yes i am

Sandile stood up from the couch and went tothe the bathroom..

Nkabinde: He has to go to the Hospital so i cantake X-rays

Me: I will talk to him

Nkabinde: Seems like he found his match..What really happened?

Me: Long story i don't wanna talk about itNkabinde: How are you holding up?

Me: Nkabinde if there's nothing else you canleave it's been a long day

He nodded and took his things.. Nkabinde: If anything happens call meMe: I will

I walked him up to the door and opened it for

him, he went out and then i closed..

I went to the bathroom to check up on Sandilehe was starring at himself in the mirror..

Me: I thought he was going to kill youHe kept quiet..

Me: Are you going to press charges?Him: No

Me: What?

Him: That's a sign of weakness i am not weak! Iam going to take him down!

Me: Sandile please i don't wanna lose youHe punched the mirror..

Him: I am not weak!! I am not a pussy he is going to pay for this!

He will regret what he did!And as for Lihle she will regret double crossingme

Me: Just leave her obviously she doesn't wantto be with you!

Him: She is my fiancé! She is my wife! We have been together for 10 years! I am not going to let him take her away from me! No one is going to take her away from me!!!

He continued punching the mirror which scared me because he was starting to bleed..

Me: Sandile stop please Him: He is going to pay!

As if that wasn't scary enough he banged his head against the broken mirror causing more damage to his already bruised forehead..

Me: Sandile please stop it!! Him: Lihle is mine!!

He was scaring me to the point of no return that I went out to call Nkabinde, my hands were even shaking. I could hear him raving like a mad person in the bathroom, this behaviour is not normal at all..

.

. LIHLE

King bought us a meal before we drove to the lodge in the car he was awfully quiet i couldn't predict if he was just quiet or mad.

When we got to the lodge i sat on the bed with my meal and he sat on the chair opposite me busy on hislaptop. I would steal glances at him and he would look at me too, but when he looks at me iwould quickly take my eyes off him and glue them on the plate that had fries and a quarter leg of chicken. King is not scared to look at me, he was just starring at me not even blinking..

Him: You not hungry?

Me: It's difficult eating while you starring at meHim: Sorry i was just lost in my thoughts

I put the plate away..

Him: You have to eat so you can drink yourpainkillers

Me: I will eat later

Him: Can i talk to you as a friend and not a cop?Me: Yes

Him: How many times has he sexually abusedyou?

I kept quiet..

Him: Please talk to meI looked at my hands..

Me: After he beat me he left then came backHim: What happened?

Me: He.. He said a few things i can't rememberexactly what he said
and then he took off his clothes

He took his laptop and put it away leaningforward to hear more..

Me: He sat on the bed and then gave himself ahand job..

I kept quiet for a few seconds..King: Lihle..

Me: He said..

My eyes accumulated tears...

Me: He forced me to fantasize about you while we were doing it

Him: Me?I nodded..

Me: He forced me to scream out your name while he was having his way with me

I wiped my tears..

Me: He did that because he was so sure that you and i we were having sex

Him: Are you sure this guy is stable Lihle, mentally?

Me: He is bipolar

Him: Has he sought medical help for it?

I shrugged my shoulders..

He took the plate of food and gave it to me...

Him: Try to eat even a little so that you can drink your pain killers

Me: Okay

I tried eating..

.

To be continued [09/28, 18:47] Ron: ¥40YAYA

Sandile hurt himself in a very bad way that he had a concussion, when Nkabinde arrived at the house we took him straight to the hospital and he was immediately admitted. This was very bad, I have seen Sandile at his worst but what I saw today was not normal, a normal person would never do what he did. What shocked me the most is that he seemed to not even be

feeling any pain as he did that, he banged his head hard against that broken mirror and it wasn't even funny. I swear as from today i hate Lihle with all my heart and soul Sandile is here now because of her and he will continue fighting for her even if it means losing his life inthe process. I was holding his hand as he peacefully laid down on that hospital bed, i am not a person who cries that easily but for the life of me i couldn't seem to hold back the tearsknowing that I could've lost him...

Nkabinde walked in..Him: How is he?

I wiped my tears..

Me: The hasn't been any changeHe looked at him..

Me: I have never seen such a behaviour beforeHim: Sandile has bipolar

I looked at him..

Me: bipolar?

Him: He never told you?Me: No.. Never

Him: He is suffering from bipolar

Me: Nkabinde i think it's more than that, this cannot be bipolar only something is seriouslywrong with him!

Him: I will have to get the psychiatrist so they can do a psychiatric evaluation and from wherei am standing he seems as if like he is now a threat to himself and to others, he will have to be put away in a safe place so that he cannot hurt himself or others

Me: Is he going to recover?

Him: With medication and therapy he will pullthrough

Me: I wonder what happened to him somethingdeep must've happened for him to be this way.Sandile has a lot of anger deep inside of him he

is damagedHim: He is

I looked at him..

Me: Is there something you not telling me?He sighed..

Him: You dating him but he has never told you anything about his life? Upbringing and everything?

Me: No he is a very private person

Him: well it's not my place to tell you thenMe: Nkabinde..

Him: I have to go patients are waiting for meHe walked away...

.

. KING

I was meant to take the chair and give Lihle the

bed for the night but she was struggling to sleep, she would wake up almost every 5min scared so i decided to lay next to her just so that she can feel safe and comfortable. When i was starting to get warm i fell asleep and it's only now i wake up in the middle of the night and realize that she wasn't laying next to me, that freaked me out..

Me: Lihle?

The kitchen light was on and i could hear a glass being banged against the counter, i got out of bed and went to the kitchen. She was busy drinking my whiskey that i was given back at home by my station the day I left. I am not that much of a drinker, so i just took the bottle and put it away in the cupboard and forgot about it. What got to me was not the fact that she was drinking but that she had a knife in her hand.

Me: Lihle..

Her: Don't get any closer or else i am going to stab myself

Her cheeks were wet with tears, she even had hiccups..

Her: He confessed he.. He confessed that he killed my Mother

She laughed for a while..

Her: I don't know how he did it because he was with me that night

My eyes were concentrating on the knife that she was busy flashing around..

Her: I hate myself King.. I hate myself that i loved him! I loved him more than i loved myself, i made him my life. I made him my breath, i made him my soul!

She wiped her tears...

Her: What do I have now? Nothing!

I was put in a difficult situation this girl is

damaged, confused, hurt, and whatever i say now won't make sense to her..

Her: I just wanna stab myself here She put the knife on her left breast.

Her: I wanna stab myself here and rip my heart out because.. Because.. Because this is where it hurts the most! I feel the pain deep inside here.. If my heart can stop beating then the pain will go away, the pain will stop King..

I slowly walked up to her...Her: Don't!!

Me: Put the knife down

Her: Take one more step and i will push it through

I took one more step and she pressed it hard against her breast..

Me: Okay i am stepping back I took a few steps back..

Her: I am tired.. I am tired! I want it all to stop.. I want the pain to stop!

Reasoning with her was not going to work, she is way too drunk and she might hurt herself..

Her: I just wanna die.. I am tired of it all!!

She closed her eyes, then opened them again...Me: Can i say something?

She shook her head no.. Me: Please just hear me out

Her: I don't wanna hear nothing..

Me: Just one last time then i promise i won't say anything anymore

She lowered the knife, that was a good start..

Me: If you going to kill yourself do it because you wanna do it but don't kill yourself because of him! He is not worth your life, what you doing he would never do for you! He would never kill himself for you don't do it for him too he is not

worth your life

She let go of the knife and broke down, i made my way to her and held her as she sank down...

Her: Make it go away... I don't wanna hurt anymore..

Me: We are going to get through this.. We are going to get through it..

She put my hand on her left breast. Her: It really hurts here.. Make it stop...She was truly breaking my heart..

.

. YAYA

I was still sitting on the chair while holding his hand it was late now and i was busy dozing. I felt a hand on my shoulder, i turned and it was Nkabinde..

Him: Come ill drive you home

Me: No i have to be here when he wakes up

Him: He is heavily sedated he might wake uptomorrow

I looked at Him..

Nkabinde: Come you cannot be here for himwhile you look like a
train ran over you

I stood up and kissed his hand..Me: I will see you tomorrow

I walked out of the hospital with Nkabinde to hiscar..

Me: Thank you for driving me homeHim: It's the least i can do

We got inside the car and he didn't start it, wesat there in silence in
that dark parking lot..

He exhaled and i rubbed my eyes while yawning...

Him: You tired?

Me: A little Him: I miss you

Me: Nkabinde please

He took my hand and placed it on his cock..Him: We miss you

He rubbed my hand against his manhood..Me: Nkabinde stop it..

Him: Just this once come on

He unzipped his pants with his other hand and then forced mine through the zip until I felt how stiff he was..

Him: Just this once come on

I don't know why but I started massaging him as i carried on he closed his eyes and moaned..

Him: That's it.. That's it right there..

He went on to unbutton his pants and took them down a little, together with his boxers then

he put his hand at the back of my neck and brought me closer to it..
Him: do me this one favour and R1 500 is going to be yours before
we drive home

I directed it inside of my mouth and just worked him now that
Sandile is a bit out of it, i am going to need this Money!!

.

To be continued No edits

[09/28, 21:38] Ron: ¥41 YAYA

The following morning i woke up and prepared myself to go to
school i was going to use Sandile's car, i have a learners and I am
not much of a bad driver. Last night what went down in Nkabinde's
car is something that I really don't wanna think about i came back
home and brushed my teeth at least three times,

just having his come inside my mouth disgusted me to the core but then i needed that money so i did what I had to do. I didn't sleep with him though i just gave him a BJ and that was it. Trust me you can judge me all you want but i hate my life too, i hate selling myself low in order to make ends meet i mean with the kind of background that I come from I would settle for anything just to not go back there again.

One would say get a job but let's be honest which Job can maintain my lifestyle? Without my degree i have grade 12 and i have seen a lot of young people unemployed it's very difficult to get a job with only a matric certificate, and I really don't want anything getting in between me and my degree. I was very nauseated i don't know if it was the cornflakes that i ate but i wasn't feeling well. I took my bag and put my text books inside when my phone vibrated, it was my Mother. I took it and exhaled before answering..

Me: Ma

Mom: Ayanda mntwanam'

Me: Kunjani Ma? (how are you)

Mom: Ngiyaphila baby wena? (I am fine and you)

Me: I am good

Mom: I was checking up on you

That's a first the only time my Mother calls me when she wants cash..

Me: That's nice thank you

Mom: For someone who is getting married soon you sound very down

Me: I am not down Ma just a lot of work at school

Mom: Hai Yaya don't let school get in between you and the wedding

Me: Huh?

Mom: Ayanda i am not trying to be somehow but.. You have a man who is very rich, who loves you, why are you still wasting your time going to school? The money he pays for your fees kube iya eskhwameni sakho! (The money he pays for your fees should be going to your own pocket)

My Mom was stressing me more on top of the stress that i was already having..

Me: Ma i will call you later

Mom: Uphi yena uSandile? (Where is Sandile) Me: He is at work

Mom: umbulise (greet him) Me: I will

Mom: Bye Me: Bye

I put my phone inside of my bag as i thought about me having to move back home should

this not work, that's going to be very depressing..

I took my bag with the car keys and headed straight to the door, i opened and some woman was standing at the door step. She was accompanied by some man..

Me: Good morning

Only the man she was with greeted back.. Him: Sawubona nakuwe (greetings to you too) I looked at them waiting for an explanation..

Him: I am Mr Khumalo, Sandile's uncle and this is MaKhumalo Sandile's Mother

My eyes widened.. Me: Please come in

They made their way in..

Me: I am Ayanda.. I am Sandile's.. I am his.. Uncle: So you are Yaya?

I nodded..

Uncle: He once told me about you.. It's nice to finally meet you, you are even more beautiful than how he described you

Me: Thank you

Sandile's Mother gave me the most coldest look that anyone has ever given me in my whole entire life..

Her: Where is Lihle?

Me: Akekho (she is not here)

Her: I can see that but what I don't understand is why are you here and she's not here?

Uncle: MaKhumalo

She gave him the hand..

Her: Ngimele kancane please (wait a minute please)

She looked at me.. Her: where is my son?

Me: He was admitted yesterdayHer: Adm..

She folded her arms..

Her: Kahle kahle ntombazana ndini ungubani?(who are you)

I didn't know how to respond because clearlyshe doesn't like me already..

.

. LIHLE

I woke up feeling very sick i forgot how terrible a hangover can get you. I rose up from the bathroom floor after vomiting and i flushed the toilet, i walked to the basin and rinsed my mouth then after looked at myself in the mirror.I looked terrible. My eyeliner was just all over my face, my eyes were a bit red i looked like a hot mess. I heard a knock at the door..

King: Lihle Me: coming

I washed my face and then wiped it with a towel that still didn't make me look better..

I walked over and opened the door he walked in while holding a glass of water and pain killers..

Him: drink this Me: thank you

I took the pain killers and drank.. Him: drink up all that water

Me: i will vomit

Him: you need to drink a lot of water you dehydrated

I forced through and drank up all the water.. Me: Thank you

He folded his arms and leaned against the wall looking at me..

I don't know what happened last night but from his look i can tell that something went down.

Me: I am sorry Him: for?

I looked at the cup and shrugged my shoulders..

Him: today i am going to take you to my Sister's place, you will stay there until i have solved your Mother's case

I looked at him and shook my head no.. Him: It's not open for discussion

Me: I don't wanna go to your Sister's place i wanna be here with you!

Him: You are a danger to yourself i cannot watch over you 24/7 my job is demanding!

Me: What if he finds me? Him: He won't!

Me: Sandile somehow had my Mother killed

while he was with me and you think he won't find me?

Him: My Sister's place is safe

Me: Your Sister cannot protect me! He put his hands in his pockets..

Him: Okay let's do this you will go over there and stay for a couple of weeks while i find us a place to stay

Me: Why can't I stay here?

Him: i work most of the time i won't be around to look after you

Me: King i can stay alone while you at work Him: I am not risking that

Me: Why not?

Him: Because i am scared! After last night i am scared that i will come back from work and find you laying on the floor in a pool of blood

What really happened last night?

Him: You are in no state to be left alone

I don't wanna be away from King, i feel safe when i am with him..

Him: We will leave after you have showered He took the cup from me and walked out..

.

. NDILE

I slowly opened my eyes to find Nkabinde looking at me he wasn't alone, he was with what looked like another Dr. I tried moving but i couldn't, i was strapped to the bed. I was a bit drowsy and weak my face had a bandage all around i could feel it, i looked at Nkabinde..

Me: What's going on?

Nkabinde: Mr Khumalo how are you feeling? Me: Nkabinde what is going on?

He looked at the Dr, The Dr walked up to me..

Him: Good morning Mr Khumalo i am Dr Maanoand I am a psychiatrist

Nkabinde: Dr Maano will be attending to yourcase

Maano: As soon as you feel better we will do a psychiatric evaluation and then transfer you to a mental institution

Not this again!!

.

To be continued [09/28, 21:40] Ron: ¥42LIHLE

We didn't go straight to his Sister's place we passed by at the mall first King had me buy a few clothes since i will be staying at his Sister's place. Buying clothes clearly confirms that he is abandoning me, he probably won't come back and fetch me. Just a few days and he is already tired of me, was i that horrible to him last night?

What really went down that he is not even telling me. He was walking behind me at Foschini while i was checking a few clothes out,he was on his phone and i was lost in my thoughts. My Mother hasn't been in the grave for even a week and already i am struggling, i don't have a home, i don't have anyone everything is just a mess. Tears burned my eyesand i held them back i was dead inside...

King cleared his throat but i didn't look at him..Him: Are you finding anything that you like?

I shook my head no..

Him: I don't wanna rush you but it's a bit of along drive to Nelspruit I nodded..

Him: Lihle come on..Me: They expensive

Him: I asked you which store and you were allquiet

Me: Let's try Mr Price

He turned me around and looked at me..Him: Are you doing this on purpose?

Me: What?

Him: Are you delaying on purpose?Me: No!

Him: Then make up your mind woman!Me: I am telling you Mr Price!

Him: Then let's go to Mr Price!

The sales lady kept on stealing glances at us as we went off against each other. I walked out and headed to Mr Price with King following me,i was looking down trying to not let my tears stream down my cheeks.

We got to Mr Price and i went to look for a few clothes. King doesn't understand the seriousness of this situation, if Sandile finds me he is going to kill me and then King goes and

dumps me at his Sister's place? His Sister is a woman just like me, a vulnerable one she won't be able to protect me!.

.

. YAYA

We were in the lounge and I had just explained to them who I was. I told the whole truth even about me and Sandile being in a relationship and me being Pregnant, as I finished explaining Sandile's Mother was already boiling inside. I kept quiet and waited for them to say something..

Uncle: Sandile did tell me about you and he was ready to make you his second wife

I nodded...

Me: Eya Malume

MaKhumalo: Nyweya Malume! Nyweya Malume my left foot!

Uncle: MaKhumalo

Me: No maan this girl is evil! Ukhohlakele! Sheknew that Sandile was in a relationship whenshe decided to date him! Who falls for a guy who is already in a relationship akaphilanga kahle lo mntwana! (she's not mental stable)

Uncle: She is pregnant now what are wesupposed to do, throw her out?

She looked at me..

MaKhumalo: Kodwa uzalwa ubani? (who gave birth to you) i really wanna see the woman whogave birth to you!

I remained quiet although i wanted to saysomething but i will not disrespect her..

Uncle: Yehlisa umoya (calm down)

MaKhumalo: You are after his Money aren'tyou?

Me: No Ma i l..

MaKhumalo: I am not your Mom! Ungalinge uthiMa (don't call me Ma)

I kept quiet...

MaKhumalo: She is not going to be Sandile's second wife! Mbheke nje (look at her)

Uncle: Kodwa uLihle akekho (Lihle is not here) you heard she left with another man!

MaKhumalo: Ayikho yonke lento! (there's nothing like that)

She stood up..

MaKhumalo: If Lihle left she left because of her! Yazi you even have the guts to move into my Son's house! Into Lihle's house!

Yeses even if i was going to accept you but now never!

She walked away to the bedrooms..

Uncle: You can go to school my child i will talk to her and thank you for telling us about Sandile

Me: Yebo Malume

I stood up and walked away..

.

. NDILE

The Psychiatrist left my ward and i was only leftwith Nkabinde..

Me: Nkabinde i am not going to a psychiatricinstitution

Nkabinde: I know it sounds somehow but it's forthe best

Me: Eyyy awungizwa kahle? (aren't you hearingme)

Nkabinde: Sandile you are in no state to bereleased

Me: I was once in a mental institution a longtime ago and I am not going back!

I tried to free myself but i was strapped very

tight..

Me: I just had an episode but now i am fine

Nkabinde: You are not fine! What if you have another episode and this time around you kill yourself or someone else? What then?

Me: Eyy fuck you wena maan!! I pay you! You follow my orders not the other way round

He looked around and then looked at me..

Him: I have lived with this mental illness all my life and i pulled through its not my first time having such an episode!

The psychiatrist walked in again..

Him: Dr Nkabinde i need you to sign here so we can move him

Me: Nkabinde you are not signing anything!

Nkabinde took the pad and pen then hesitated..

Me: i am going to kill you wena! I am going to

kill you!

I tried to break free but it was impossible..

Me: Ang'hlanyi mina! Ang'hlanyi (I am notcrazy)

Maano: Thank you Doc

Nkabinde: When is he going to be taken away?

Maano: It won't be long just waiting for theNurse to come and sedate him

I was so pissed i swear i am going to deal withNkabinde when i make it through! I cannot be detained i cannot lose Lihle to King..

.

To be continued [09/28, 21:41] Ron: ¥43LIHLE

I walked around the room introspecting it and itwasn't bad. It was very clean, had a good scentand very tidy. The door opened and Sylvia

walked in holding a clean bed linen, ever since i arrived here a few hours ago she has been giving me her warm smile. She has been showing me soo much hospitality that it didn't seem normal..

Her: It's King's bedroom Me: It's very clean

Her: Here is a clean bed linen

Me: It's fine I will sleep on this one

Her: Are you sure? I haven't changed it since he left

That's what i needed, i wanna sleep where he slept i wanna smell his scent that will at least make me feel safe. It will make me feel as if like he is here with me..

She sat down and looked at me i don't know if it runs in the family for them to just stare at someone like this..

Her: I am sorry just that i have never seen such

a beautiful dark skin girl before Me: Thank you.. You also beautiful

Her: Let me not keep you it's late have a goodnight rest

Me: Thank you

Her: don't hesitate to call me when you needsomething

Me: I won't

Her: Tomorrow when you wake up i might notbe here

Me: You work?

Her: I volunteer at a shelter where abusedwomen and children stay

Me: That's good.. So you don't work?

Her: No i don't.. I get an allowance every monthmy husband passed on a few years ago he wasa cop so i get money every month

Me: I am sorry to hear that

Her: If you knew the real story you wouldn't be Me: Ohw
The door flung open and some girl walked in..Her: I thought Uncle
King was around

Sylvia: Lihle meet my annoying daughter Momo, and Momo meet
Sis' Lihle she is Uncle's King's friend and she will be staying with
us for a while

Momo: Ohh Okay

She looked at her Mother.. Momo: Uncle King was around?

Sylvia: Yes but left quickly because he was in a hurry

Momo: When is he coming back? Sylvia: I am not sure

She stood up..

Sylvia: Let's give Sis' Lihle some space i am sure

she's tired

Momo walked out..Sylvia: Good night Me: Night
They walked out and closed the door..

.

. KING

I made my way straight to the police station after i got a call from the captain it was around 23:00 and quite frankly i was tired from all the driving i did today. I was holding a can of redbullas i passed Fikile at the reception..

Her: There's a pretty interesting case in youroffice

Me: Really?Her: Yeap

Me: Okay.. Before i forget please call Lihletomorrow morning she could use a friend

Her: Is she alright?

Me: Just call her pleaseShe got her phone out..

Me: Not now tomorrow morning

Her: Is she alright? You are scaring me

Shongwe showed up from the office to thereception..

Shongwe: Nkambule we have been waiting foryou!

Me: call her tomorrowShe nodded..

I made my way to the office and I saw some guy sitting on the chair in the middle of the room, he looked dirty and he was shivering. Itwas definitely one of the Nyaope boys..

Captain was leaning against the desk with his

arms folded, Shongwe closed the door..Me: Cap what's happening?

Cap: Boy tell us again

Him: I am here ngoba ngibulale umuntu (i have killed someone)

Me: Huh?

Him: Entlek sithengiwe! (we were bought) Shongwe: Nithengwe ubani? (who bought you)

Him: Ng'cela i fix nyana (can i please have a fix)

Me: You were bought by a guy named Sandile?

Him: Ang'cavi (i don't know)

He scratched himself..

Him: i cheese boy nyana nje (he is a cheeseboy)

Shongwe: why are you telling us now?

Him: igazi lo muntu liyakhuluma lo yaMamaufikile kimi wathi ngize la uhlala la

emicabangweni yami (a person's blood can talk, that woman came to me and said i must come here. She is always in my thoughts)
We all looked at each other..

.

. NDILE

These four walls were not big enough for me to breathe. I felt very much suffocated as if like i was going out of my mind. It was quiet, it was dark! Nothing was a company to me other than the bed, the chair, and the table. I got up and went to the door, i started banging on it..

Me: Get me out! Ngikhipheni la! (get me out of here)

I looked around and i heard voices in my head, i was going out of my mind. I kept on banging on the door.

Me: Someone get me out of here!!

I went back and got the chair then started hitting it against the door.

Me: Vulani mina ang'hlanyi! (open i am not crazy)

After a few minutes i heard the door opening, two men walked in wearing all white. They put me down and one of them injected me..

Me: Ang'hlanyi mina!! (I am not crazy)

.

[09/28, 21:47] Ron: ¥44LIHLE

I woke up the following morning and the house was quiet the first thing i did was to check my phone and I only had a missed call from Fikile, nothing from King. My heart was a little broken i thought he was going to call me maybe and ask how I am finding the place, how i slept, if i am safe but nothing at all. I got out of bed and went to the dressing table to pick up the picture of

some beautiful lady i looked at her for a while and she must be King's girlfriend or something. I checked a few pictures of them around the room and now i know why he is not calling and checking up on me, he has a woman in his life and he doesn't care about me anymore. I made my way to the bathroom to brush my teeth and washed my face, i fixed my braids and went to the kitchen still wearing Pajamas. On the kitchen counter i found a R200 note, that was accompanied by another note left for me by Sylvia: "Good morning Hlehle. I left you this money so that you can take a walk and go to the shoppingcenter and get you a nice breakfast. The shopping center is not far, it's a 10min walk justgo straight. I will see you later at around 17:00" i went back to the bedroom and changed then i made my way to the shopping center. It was a quiet suburban neighborhood had a few white neighbours and it seems as if like people mind

their own business around here..

.

. YAYA

Having Sandile's Mother around was a drag it was just me and her around the house. I made my way to the kitchen i already had my bag and prepared to go to school, she was in the kitchen drinking tea. I thought of turning back but she had already saw me. I made my way in while she gave me that disgusting look of hers, this woman can eat me alive..

Me: Good morning MaKhumaloShe kept quiet..

I wanted to make breakfast but with her around and looking at me in that manner, whatever breakfast i am going to eat won't go down well.I took an apple instead and headed straight to the door..

Her: Kahle wena Ntombazana (wait a minute)I stopped and exhaled then looked at her..

Her: My Son's car keys?

I went and handed them to her..

Her: Today i want you out of this house!Me: I understand

Her: And a sincere word of adviceI looked at her..

Her: That thing you carryingShe looked at my tummy..

Her: get rid of it!Me: sorry?

Her: I will never accept what you carrying as mygrandchild! That thing is cursed! It wasn't conceived in the right way

Me: I am carrying your Son's baby

Her: I don't care! Lale la (listen here) get rid of

that thing and then leave my son alone! I will never accept you and he will never marry you! You will never be a Khumalo

I didn't reply to her comment i made my way to the door..

Her: Haibo and your clothes?

Me: can i call my friend to pick me up first? She agreed with her eyes and not her mouth..I went out to call Candice..

.

. KING

We had concrete evidence to build a case against Sandile with the confession we were able to only get the second suspect and the the 3rd one who was the one who stabbed MaCele so his friends said was nowhere to be found, he had flee way before the friend came to confess

yesterday. Ontop of the murder charges i am adding a charge of domestic abuse accordingto Lihle's statement and her testifying againsthim will put Sandile away for a very long time.

That morning i walked in the station and Fikilecame up to me..

Her: DetectiveMe: Yes

Her: Can i have a word with you?Me: Yes of cause

She pulled me on the side..

Her: I called Lihle as you had instructed meMe: And?

Her: She didn't pick upMe: She didn't?

Her: No

Me: That's strange

Her: What is really happening?

Me: It's a long story i will tell you later
Her: King she is my best friend

Me: I will tell you later

I walked to my office with my phone out i was about to call Lihle..

Shongwe: Finally he walks in
Me: Eyy

Shongwe: we have to discuss the case
Me: It's done we got the culprit
Shongwe: I wouldn't be so sure

I put my phone on my desk..
Me: Why?

Shongwe: Mr Sandile Khumalo won't stand trial
Me: Why? We have concrete proof

Shongwe: We do but..

Me: But what?

Shongwe: His psychiatrist came through for him

Me: his what?

Shongwe: He is in a mental institution and he is pronounced unfit to stand trial

I punched my desk..

Shongwe: Tests were done and his Psychiatrist will take a stand during the trial to prove that he was "unfit" when the whole thing took place plus he didn't really kill her so he is a clean and free man

Me: He was the master mind behind this whole thing

Shongwe: He didn't kill her the one who actually did the stabbing is the one who is going to be charged with first degree murder

He stood up..

Shongwe: don't look so frustrated at least we got Justice for the poor woman we have the people who did this and we will find the last one

Me: He is actually going to get away with this

Shongwe: Seems that way plus there's no proofpinning him to the murder basically it's his word against the Nyaope boys he can easily pin it against them that they actually did this on their own to rob the poor woman of his money and other valuables to sustain their addiction

Me: We can get his bank statements they said he paid them he will have to explain the transactions dating back to when MaCele was murdered, his phone records and everything else

Shongwe: could've slightly worked but I am afraid our hands are tied he is a lost case with a mental illness so rather let's focus on the culprits at hand

He walked away..

So the bastard is actually going to get away with murder and domestic violence? i have failed Lihle..

.

. LIHLE

I bought me a nice meal at kfc and then after I went and bought myself a bottle of first watch whiskey at Pick n pay liquor store then i went back home. I checked my phone and I had received a message from King which read:

"I am sorry Lihle that i have failed you. The way that i am so disappointed i can't even call your face you right now. Sandile is going to get away with everything because of his mental illness, he is in a mental institution and his psychiatrist is coming through for him. I am very sorry but we have the people who actually

murdered your Mother they confessed to have been bought by Sandile, but him.. He is going to get away with it"
I sank down on the couch, that message took the last breath that i had left in me..

.
2 MONTHS LATER.. [09/28, 21:49] Ron: ¥452 MONTHS
LATER KING

The house wasn't bad i liked it a lot it's going to be better than being compressed at the Lodge. Fikile did a pretty good job furnishing it, i can't thank her enough..

Fikile: So?

Me: It's good thank you

Fikile: Just know that i will be sending you the invoice

I laughed...

Fikile: Really though King i am a Lieutenant nota decor i only did this because you told me thatLihle will be moving in with you

Me: Today i am going to fetch her She looked at me in a strange way..Me: What?

Fikile: You like her don't you?Me: Did i say that?

Fikile: You didn't have too

Me: I feel like i owe her a lot after not being ableto put that psycho behind bars this is the least icould do for her

Fikile: I still cannot believe that Sandile did all ofthose things I mean they have been together for10 years i thought he loved her but he fooled usall

Me: If it was up to me i would've put a bullet

though him

Fikile: How is Lihle holding up?

Me: She hasn't been taking my calls for 2 months but talking with my Sister she is saying that Lihle is not holding up well, she has downed herself deeply into alcohol that's why i wanna go and get her. She needs a new fresh start

Fikile: I agree

I looked at the time..Me: I have to go

Fikile: I will come and check up on hertomorrow when you guys are back

Me: You should

She put her hand on my shoulder..Her: drive safely

Me: I will

.

. LIHLE

Everyday is like a weekend for me my life hasn't been easy. I wake up and sleep on alcohol, it's the only comfort i find to shift away from my depressing thoughts and everything else. It was a Saturday morning and i had a hangover as always, i got out of bed and searched for pain killers dang! I have finished all of them. I would ask Sylvia but we haven't been seeing eye to eye lately, last night when I was drunk we exchanged words no make that i said most of the words. I walked out of the bedroom and went to the bathroom to brush my teeth. I don't believe in suicide that part of me that still slightly believes in God doesn't favour me to commit suicide. I brushed my teeth while looking at myself in the mirror, once upon a time i was strong but now I don't even recognize the person on the

other side of the mirror anymore. I washed my face and then went back to the bedroom to have a cap of what was left of the whiskey. Nomsa has been the one who was funding my alcohol addiction, she doesn't know that I drink to her it's just "helping a friend in need". I wore my sleepers and then made my way to the kitchen Sylvia and Momo were baking..

Me: Good morning

They both looked at me..Momo: Morning Sis' Lihle

Momo is a ball of positive energy she is full of life and always speaking her mind..

Sylvia: Morning

I made my way to the fridge..Momo: Any plans for today?

Me: Just locked up in my room as always dearMomo: Well i am happy that Uncle King is

coming today

Me: King is coming? Momo: Yes

King and i haven't been communicating for the last 2 months he didn't care about me so i didn't wanna bother him, i don't want his girlfriend coming at me.

I looked at Sylvia..

Me: Why didn't you tell me?

Sylvia: Lihle you are always drunk it's even difficult to talk to you at times

I banged the fridge and went back to the bedroom..

.

. YAYA

Nkabinde got off me and laid on the side while catching his breath, this was the second and

last round for today. He took off the condom to go and dispose it. Life hasn't been a crystal ball for me lately especially since Sandile has been locked up, I have been struggling to make ends meet. Nkabinde is not like Sandile he is a bit stingy but nevertheless he gives me money to send home.

I terminated the pregnancy a few weeks ago, I wasn't going to be able to carry through with the pregnancy since Sandile wasn't around..

Nkabinde walked back in and started dressing up..

Him: I will transfer the R1 000 later on to your account

Me: Only R1 000?

Him: I am not Sandile I have a wife and kids
Me: Nkabinde now you just playing with me

Him: Then go and find someone else who is going to pay you more

I kept quiet..

Him: Take it and be gratefulHe took his jacket and left..

I laid there thinking how i winded up withNkabinde..

.

. SANDILE

I was sitting alone in a quiet room while readingthe newspaper. It wasn't a newspaper for todaybut from last month, I read it everyday to remindmyself of the evil that i have done and the pain that I have caused a lot of people. The Nurse walked in..

Her: Mr KhumaloI looked at her..

Her: Time to take your medicationMe: Thank you

I took the pills and drank..

Me: At what time is my appointment with DrMaano?

Her: 10:00am Me: Thank you She stood there..

Me: Anything else?

Her: You have made a tremendous change

Me: I did and everything is coming back to menow

Her: Don't beat yourself about it the person whodid all of those things is gone now

Me: But i still feel a certain type of wayHer: Are you ready to go home?

Me: I seriously don't know

Her: You need to go and face the world i thinkthe new you is ready

Me: You think so?

Her: I know so

[09/28, 21:51] Ron: ¥46NDILE

Therapy sessions with Dr Maano are worth it dating back to the abuse and pain i was put through as a child and talking about everything that has happened was like a heavyweight lifted off my shoulders. I never knew that talking could help this much until my mouth expelled all that was in my heart..

Maano: Do you think that one day you can forgive your Father?
I stopped and thought about it for a second or two..

Me: I seriously don't know

Maano: Don't you think that the hate and anger that you holding on against him is the reason that you became this bitter person?

Me: could be

He closed the book that he was holding..Maano: That would be all for today

I got up from the couch and sat up straight..Me: Do you think I am ready to go home?

Maano: You are making good progress but i amnot ready to let you go yet what if you relapse?

I nodded..

Me: I also think soo

On my side i didn't wanna be released because iam not ready to face the world outside, to face what I have done..

Me: Thank you Dr Maano Maano: I will see you tomorrowI stood up and walked out..

I didn't go to my room i went straight to the phone to call Big Daddy, he is the only person I

communicate with because he has taken charge of my businesses just until I get out of here..

Him: Hello?

Me: Big Daddy it's me

Him: Sandile i didn't expect your call today

Me: Just called to check if everything is going well?

Him: Everything is going well with your businesses

Me: That's good to hear

Him: When are you getting out? Me: I am not sure

Him: Is it that bad?

Me: No i am coming alright

Him: I still cannot believe that you suffering from bipolar when i looked at you that time you came across very sane

Me: I know but with the medication and therapy i am getting there

Him: I have to go man have a couple of things to do

Me: Let me not keep you then

He hung up. I didn't put down the phone, my finger found itself punching Lihle's number. I don't know why i was calling her but I found myself calling her..

My heart raced as i waited for her to pick up i don't even know what i am going to say..

Lihle: Hello..

She still has a beautiful voice.. Lihle: Hello??

My lips moved but my throat was blocked, my voice just couldn't come out..

Lihle: Hello?.. Who is calling?

I move the phone from my ear and place it back

were it belongs, I closed my eyes as my mind shifted and dated back to that time when i beather to a pulp. I could still hear her voice beggingme to stop, i could still hear her apologizing for something that she didn't even do just so i could stop beating her. I could still see pictures clearly in my head playing out like a movie as i violated her sexually and looking deep into her eyes as the tears formed..

I opened my eyes and i was holding the phone tight while it was down with my hand shaking, my breathing was abnormal. I let go of it and dothe breathing exercise that Dr Maano taught mei am even counting backwards to calm myself down, how could I be so stupid? How could I hurt the only girl that possibly loved me unconditionally? I was very angry with myself!

.

. YAYA

I had moved out of my flat to live with my friend Candice because I couldn't afford rent anymore, Candice has been so accommodating but now I can see that it was becoming a bit much for her though she doesn't complain. I eat her food, she buys me toiletries, gives me money for my hair, and drives me to school that's too much for one person. The money that I get from Nkabinde I have to send home so that they can eat..

I was watching tv when I received a call from my Sister Thandeka..

Me: Thandeka Her: Hello Ayanda Me: How are you?

Her: I wish I could say good but I am not Me: What's wrong?

Her: Mom took the money that we were supposed to buy food with, she went drinking

as always I exhaled..

Her: Grams hasn't eaten anything concrete other than the sour porridge i made for her without sugar she can't even drink her meds

Me: I have R1000 i will send you R500

Her: Thank you very much i will go with my friend to collect the money she has an ID

Me: You will call me back when you have discussed it with her then

Her: Thank you very much Yaya, you are a blessing to us

I hung up. I wish they knew what i was going through, i wish they knew where this money is coming from. I wish my Mother could stop what she's doing and step up to providing for the family. I miss Sandile, i truly do. Life is very difficult without him..

.

. LIHLE

I had passed out after that weird phone call that i had received i was out of it from the whiskey that i had been drinking. I tossed and turned after a while only to find King sitting next to me and starring at me. I blinked a few times to make sure that it was him, and indeed it was him. I rose up from the pillow and rubbed my eyes..

Me: King?

He stretched his hand and parted my braids that were crowding my face..

Him: Hey

I sat up straight..

Me: When did you arrive? Him: Just a while ago

He continued starring at me, i hate it when he

does that it's like his searching deeper into mysoul..

Him: What's been happening with you?Me: Nothing

He raised his right eyebrow...

Me: Why do you even care? It's not like you have called lately to check up on me

I laid back on the pillow again..

Him: don't give me that i have been calling and you haven't been picking up

I kept quiet..

Him: Get up and go shower we are leavingMe: I am not going anywhere

Him: I wasn't asking you i was telling youI ignored him..

He clicked his tongue..

Him: Konje there's only one language that you

understand!

He stood up and then picked me up, he put me over his shoulder...

Me: King put me down!!! (shouting)

He went out and opened the bathroom door and then put me down, i pushed him..

Me: Don't ever touch me again! I pushed him again and again..

Me: Don't ever touch me ever again!!!

He held me tight on the sides of my arms and shook me a bit..

Him: Stop it!! You hear me? stop it!! We looked at each other..

Him: Dammit Lihle i know you hurting but life doesn't end here!

Pick yourself up and keep on moving! This constant drinking and all this nonsense it ends today you hear me?

I looked at him and kept quiet..

Him: I said do you hear me? I slowly nodded..

He opened the shower door.. Him: Get in!

He was very serious..

I started undressing, he looked away.. Him: You could've warned me

He turned and opened the door.. Me: I want you to keep me company He had his back facing me..

Him: Step inside then

I went in and ran the water while closing the shower door, he closed the door and came backin..

[09/28, 21:54] Ron: ¥47LIHLE

When i walked out of the shower he walked out

too as to not see me naked if i can think of it that way. When i went to the bedroom he was sitting in the lounge up until i finished dressingup and then he came..

Him: Are you ready to go?I nodded..

He looked at me one more time..Me: You can take my bag

Him: Ohw ya

I chuckled as he walked to get my bag..Him: What?

He picked it up and looked at me giving me thatwide smile of his..

Me: Nothing.. Him: ready to go?

Me: I won't even say Goodbye to Sylvia andMomo

Him: You can always call them Me: Where are they vele?

Him: They went out shopping i think Me: Okay

I walked out and he followed me, something in me knew that he was starrng at me as i walked i mean you can feel when someone is starrng at you. I was wearing a short with a matching tshirt and sandals, nothing fancy about my outfit but i know everything i wear compliments my body. He became a gentleman and opened the door for me..

Me: Thank you

He closed it and then went to put my bag at the back seats. King is playing gentleman on me and I find it awkward, especially because he has a girlfriend. He got inside and closed the door...

Him: Are you ready to go? Me: Yes

He started the car..

We were both quiet in the car as he drove i turned and looked at him. I wanted to make him uncomfortable too. He ignored me at first, then after a few minutes he chuckled.

Me: see how uncomfortable it is when one stares at you?

Him: Who said i was uncomfortable at you staring at me?

He said that with his eyebrow raised, i like it when he does that makes him look cute..

Me: Tell me something

He looked at me and then concentrated on the road again.

I maintained a comfortable position and he stole a glance at my thighs.

Me: How is your girlfriend going to feel with you being this much of a gentleman to me?

Him: girlfriend?

Me: Her pictures are all over in your bedroom

He kept quiet and tightened his grip on the steering wheel..

Me: Did I say something wrong? Him: No

He kept quiet i didn't ask any further questions i looked at the road..

Him: She was my fiancé passed on a few years ago

Me: I am sorry

Him: It's fine it was a long time ago Me: what happened?

Him: she was hijacked they took her car and shot her

Me: That's terrible i am really sorry Him: Its fine

Me: So ever since she passed on you never dated again?

Him: Yes Me: Really?

Him: Yes really

Me: Wait so you telling me that you never had sex since she passed on?

Him: That's my business Me: are you gay?

He laughed..

Me: I thought men couldn't survive for that long without sex

He didn't reply to that..

Me: or you have been smashing someone? Him: Why are we discussing my sex life?

Me: Just curious Him: be curious then

(silence)

Me: Why do you like starring at me?Him: You really wanna know?

Me: Yes because it makes me veryuncomfortable

Him: Okay

I was curious to hear this..Him: You serious?

Me: I am

Him: I can see thatMe: so?

Him: well i like how your eyes glow when you smile the same glow comes again when you about to cry. I like how you curve your lower lipwhen you upset, and that cute adorable look you have when something doesn't go your way

Me: ohw

He looked at me and smiled then looked at the road again..

Him: and i like what you doing now Me: what am i doing?

Him: how they widen when you hear something that you didn't expect to hear

I kept quiet and listened to him..

Him: You are a perfection inside and out yours smooth skin, sexy body and beautiful looks

He bit his lower lip..

Him: I am still trying to understand how your "Fiancé" never appreciated the kind of woman that you are

He turned...

Him: I mean i would literally worship the ground that you walk on, i would kiss every tear that falls, I would tell you i love you everyday until you get annoyed. I would stay up all night to

watch you sleep, i can wake up to the sound of your voice every morning singing and moving your perfect small butt while brushing your teeth. I would fu..

He cleared his throat..

Him: I would show you love in all possible ways especially in the bedroom, gently but roughly fuck you out of your mind just to hear you say my name while you lose your breath, i wouldn't stop until I see that you have had enough of me. I would watch every annoying chick flick movie with you just to see your heart melt away when you witness a love scene and wait to see how your heart would break if the couple breaks up just so i understand that love to a woman is more than a chapter, it's the whole book. I would perk your lips to annoy you when you mad at me until you smile, I would never let you go to bed if we fought because then it gets hard to talk about it in the morning. At times I would keep quiet the whole day just to see if you going

to miss talking to me, i would annoy you when you cooking or bathing to hear your voice when you frustrated i would...

He kept quiet..

Him: I think we running out of fuel.. Luckily we not far from the garage

I didn't hear that i was smitten by what he said..

I only came back to reality when I felt his fingers wiping my cheeks i didn't even know that i was crying.

Him: Are you okay?

I was emotional that the only thing i could do was to keep on nodding repeatedly..

Him: I feel bad now..

He kept on looking at me and then looked at the road until we pulled over at the garage..

Him: Hey im sorry if..

Me: It's not you i am fine..

Him: are you sure?Me: Yes i am fine
I wiped my tears..

.

. YAYA

Candice forced me that we should go and see Sandile i didn't want too at first but then i need to see how he is holding up, i need to see if westill have a future together. She didn't come with me inside i went in alone and they allowedme in after explaining in detail who i was..

I was waiting for him in a room that resembleda lounge, it had couches and a plasma tv. I kepton looking around and this place wasn't bad i thought i was going to see a lot of mental unstable people walking around but I saw noneof that..

The Nurse came back to me she was alone..

Her: I am sorry but he doesn't want to see you Me: what?

Her: He refused to come and see you I stood up...

Me: Did you tell him that it's me? Did you tell him that it's Yaya?

Her: Yes i did.. I am so sorry

I sat on the couch again, how can he do this tome?

.

. LIHLE

King came back into the car holding a chocolatemilkshake.

Him: I got you this.. Me: Thank you

Our hands touched as he gave it to me and we

just looked at each other for that moment. In my heart i kept on yearning for him to make a move "make a move King"

He let go and cleared his throat..

He started the car, that was a bit of a bummer! I am the girl here, i am the one who is supposed to play hard to get!

I clicked my tongue, he looked at me..

Me: I don't even want this damn milkshake you could've asked me first!

He laughed at me as i frowned. He pulled over on the side just to look at me and laugh, i turned and faced the other way..

Him: Lihle..Me: No!!

I folded my arms..

.

To be continued

[09/29, 11:05] Ron: ¥48YAYA

I was upset that Sandile didn't wanna see me i mean he knew it was me why did he say no? Hecouldn't even think of coming and at least ask me about the "Baby" what is wrong with him?

Does he know how difficult it is for me? I threwmy bag on the floor and went to throw myself on the couch..

Candice: Calm down Yaya

Me: Calm down? I cannot calm down! Heliterally refused to see me!

Candice: Maybe he's still in a bad shape

Me: Bad shape or not! Sandile should've seenme i mean we are getting married for heaven'ssake when he gets released!

Candice: So what are you going to do now?Me: I don't know i have no idea

She came to me with a glass of wine while holding hers too..

Candice: Yaya you really need to sort out your life hey

Me: don't you think I know that? I know that!

Candice: Geez! Don't bite my head off i am trying to help

I sat up straight and took the glass.. Me: I'm sorry i didn't mean to
bash out on you i am just stressed

Candice: I get you

Me: If i don't send money my Mother is going to make noise for me
i cannot even go back home

Candice: We will think of something don't worry

Me: Nkabinde is not even giving me enough money

Candice: You must stop sleeping with him it's highly useless

Me: I get that but i currently have nothing

Candice: we will think of something i will talk toBig Daddy

Me: I can't believe Sandile did this to me

Candice: Just give him time he will comearound

Me: He has too

I gulped down that glass of wine..

.

. NDILE

I was walking around in the garden with Dr Maano i think now i have to go back home, go back and fix my life. I cannot run away forever..

Maano: I still don't think it's a good idea for meto release you

Me: I understand but i think i am ready now

Maano: but a person who has suffered such a serious mental disorder it's easy for you to relapse

Me: I will take my medication and i will still attend therapy i need to go back to my life and fix everything

Maano: Being released means a lot to you?

Me: There's someone who means the world to me i need to make it right with her

Maano: Lihle? Me: Yes

Maano: Do you think Lihle will be able to forgive you after everything that you told me you did to her?

Me: I don't know but i have to try i truly love her Doc and i want to make it right

Maano: what if she has a restraining order against you?

Me: I hope she hasn't

Maano: I think you have made a tremendous change and I think you can survive the outsideworld, the only way to keep on beating this is totake your medication and attend therapy

Me: I will be fully committed to that i promiseyou

He stopped and looked around..

Him: You have made a lot of friends aroundhere they going to miss you

Me: I will definitely come back and visit themHe slightly smiled..

Me: Thank you for everything i know i wasn'tany easy patient around here

He chuckled..

Maano: It's always like that the first few weeksbut then you get used to the place

Me: This place has made a huge difference in

my life

Maano: Go out there and show everyone that you can lead a normal life while you have a mental disorder

Me: I will Doc don't worry

Maano: i will do one last psychiatric evaluation on you then next week you will be a free man

I gave him a handshake..Me: Thank you

.

. KING

I am very much attracted to Lihle. From the very first time i laid my eyes on her that day when i saw her wondering on the streets confused and hurt from that point on i knew that she was someone that i would really like to know and possibly be involved with. As time went on my

feelings for her grew and now I am very sure that she is the one for me. It's a risk jumping in a relationship with her while she is still confused like this, i need her sober minded i need her to be sure that she wants to be in a serious relationship. I am at the point in my lifewhere I need someone who is serious i cannot keep on jumping from one girl to another one i need someone that i can have a future with, someone who will ground me..

She walked around the house looking at everything while my eyes were glued on her sexy long legs..

She stopped and then turned around to look at me, i quickly moved my eyes from her legs to her face..

Me: and?

She folded her arms.. Her: It's not bad

She curved her lower lip as always.

Me: Fikile outdid herself for you to just say "It's not bad"

That didn't sit well with her..Her: Fikile did everything?

Me: Pretty much i was busy so she did the decor

She kept quiet for a while...Me: What's on your mind?

Her: I just think since you did this for me you could've asked for my opinion on how i like things done!

Me: Ohw

She still gave me a bit of an attitude.Me: do you like the house?

Her: Why don't you ask Fikile?

She clicked her tongue and walked away, i

followed her..

Me: What's wrong with you?Her: Nothing King!

She looked around.. Her: Where is my bag?Her: It's in the car

She tried walking away but i put my hand around her small waist
and brought her back bylifting her up a little..

Me: What's wrong?

She didn't say anything..Me: Talk to me

I ran my thumb on her cheek and she hit myhand off..

Me: Stop giving me attitude and talk to meHer: do you like me?

Me: What?

Her: Are you attracted to me?Me: Huh?

Her: What are we doing?Me: We.. I..

Her: Exactly! King i am a womanMe: I know that..

Her: No allow me to speak i let you say yourpiece in the car now
allow me to speak!

She said that while poking me on the chest..Me: Okay speak

I put my hands in my pockets..

Her: You cannot just give me mixed signals, busy treating me like i
am your girlfriend but atthe end you just rub me off! Don't do that,
don'tgive me false hope! Rather just leave me to goand live my life
than too..

I pulled her closer to me and kissed her, i don'teven know why i did
that but i just found her

more and more attractive while busyblabbering..

As we carried on with the kiss she relaxed and put her hands around my neck while i squeezedher waist.

.

. YAYA

Candice had a few glasses and ended up goingto bed for a nap while she was sleeping i stole her car keys and drove to the mental institutionto see Sandile again. I wasn't going to let this go he is being crazy! If he doesn't want to see me willingly then I will force him to see me.

They didn't give me a hassle as i thought they would, they let me in and that Nurse came backagain..

Me: I thought I told you that he doesn't want tosee you

Me: Tell him that Lihle Cele is here to see himShe looked at me..

Me: Please I really need to see him

Her: I cannot force the patient to see you underfalse pretenses it's unethical

Me: Please i really need to see himShe looked at me for a while..

Me: Please.. She sighed.. Her: wait here

She disappeared and i sat on the couch all nervous. I was busy blowing air on my handsand rubbing them i hope this works..

The Nurse showed up with him after 5 minutes,i stood up. He was wearing all white. White pants, white shirt, and white sleepers..

Nurse: I will give you some space

She walked away..

We looked at each other and he looked very good apart from the scars on his face..

Me: How.. How are you?Him: You are not Lihle

Me: You refused to see me

He went and sat on the other couch.Me: I miss you Sandile

He didn't say anything he just looked down..Me: Sandile!

He looked at me.. Him: Yaya i am sorry

I looked at him confused..Me: Sorry?

Him: I want nothing to do with you anymore our affair ruined things for me with Lihle

Me: What? Sandile it's me.. It's me Yaya!

Him: I am truly sorry I shook my head no..Me: I love you!

He kept quiet..

Me: Did you hear that? I love you! Him: Yaya don't do this to yourself

Me: No don't do this to me! Where is she? She's not here she's with another man! Don't you think that if she loved you she would be here?

He stood up.. Him: I am sorry

Me: No!! Sandile don't do this to me!! I will not allow you to do this to me!

.

[09/29, 11:06] Ron: ¥49YAYA

He turned and came back because i was

making noise..

Him: You cannot just yell all you want and act crazy this is a mental hospital they will lock you up!

Me: Let them lock me up!

Him: Dammit Yaya! You knew very well what was happening between us it wasn't a relationship we were having an affair, you was my stress reliever and don't act like you loved me because you were after my wallet!

Me: You made me love you Sandile! You promised me the world, the stars, the moon, and the sun! You were about to marry me remember?

Him: I wasn't in the right state of mind by then i am sorry. I am sorry that i led you on i shouldn't have done that but you know that i love Lihle it has always been like that

Me: You don't love her you are bloody obsessed

with her! If you loved her you wouldn't have put her through so much pain. Look Sandile i know that i am the last person to talk about love but your love hurts! Your definition of love is cruel

Him: If you worried about your finances i will still take care of you because you are carrying my baby but i don't wanna upset Lihle so i will only pay your tuition fees and provide for the baby

I looked at him and laughed, i literally burst in laughter that he got confused..

Me: Ohh my Goodness! You are more delusional than i had anticipated you deserve to be here. Sandile Lihle is not with you anymore, Lihle is in love with someone else. Lihle is not me she would never give in to your sexual fantasies Lihle is not me she would never take in all the abuse!

Him: I think you should leave

Me: Open your eyes Sandile you lost her! That

girl is everything but she's definitely not a fool. Don't you think that if she wanted to be with you she would've long come to see you?

I continued laughing and i saw his hand forming a fist, he clenched his teeth

We stood there in silence.. Him: You should leave Yaya

Me: You are more delusional than I had anticipated this institution shouldn't let you go

Him: Yaya go!

Me: That is why i have been screwing Nkabinderight under your nose!

He looked at me..Him: What?

Me: All the things i have been doing to you i do it to him now!

I shook my head while looking at him from head to toe..

Me: You definitely not worth it!

I started walking away while laughing..

Me: No wonder why Lihle left your sorry ass!!

.

. LIHLE

We didn't go further with the kiss King pulled out before things went far. We were now sitting on the couch, his head was on my thighs and he was playing with my fingers.

Me: Why didn't you tell me that you had a thing for me?

The corner of his mouth moved...

Him: You were still confused i didn't want to confuse you more and you still are

Me: I am not

Him: You were still hung over your fiancé

Me: Ex fiancé

Him: So what now? What is your heart telling you?

I took a deep breath..

Me: I am still hurt by my Mother's passing but I think fate brought me you

He kissed my fingers..

Him: Lihle i am serious if you want to be in a relationship with me i want you to be serious and fully commit to it i know it won't be easy with everything that has happened but we will take it one day at the time. I am a very patient man

He squeezed my cheek..

Him: and beautiful things are worth being patient for
I smiled..

Me: I wish that i had met you before him

Him: well it's good that you met him first so that now you can know what real love is

Me: That's true

Him: I have two requests Me: What?

Him: I want you to stop drinking for now you will see alcohol some other time now it's not advisable for you to drink because you are emotionally dependent on it

Me: what's the other request?

Him: whatever dream you wanted to achieve I want you to go for it I nodded..

Me: I have a few requests too Him: They are?

Me: Never raise your hand on me Him: Never!

Me: And please don't cheat on me if you don't want me anymore just tell me

Him: Cheating is for boys who don't know what they want i am a man i know what i want

He put his hand on my neck and pulled me closer to him to kiss him.

Me: ouch you straining my neck! Him: You such a baby!

We both laughed..

.

. NDILE

I was in my room luckily there's no cameras inside i was mad, i was very mad. All along i trusted Nkabinde i thought he was my friend but he was busy chowing my bitch right under my nose. I walked around and went to punch the table a few times until my hand was numb..

Me: Fuck Sandile get a grip!!!

I cannot afford to mess up this "perfect" change, i cannot give Dr Maano a reason to keep me here.

I am a monster, i am beast! No amount of pills and therapy will ever change that..

[09/29, 11:06] Ron: ¥50A WEEK LATER SANDILE

I was released from the institution and I was back at home, my house. I was surprised to see that my Mother has been living here ever since..

Mom: Do you want something to eat? I have cooked

I was looking at the letter from work they have terminated my contract..

She sat down across me..

Mom: Kodwa can they do this? Firing you because of your mental illness?

Me: It's not just about that Mom also the newspaper article that I murdered Lihle's Mom

Mom: That is madness you are not a murderer they found the people who did this Moss!

She exhaled..

Mom: Now Lihle is going to think that you murdered her Mother I tossed the letter on top of the table.

Me: At least i still have the club and the restaurant

Mom: You are not going to fight them? Me: No

Mom: Hau Sandile!

Me: Aii Mom it's a private company they might have pretty good lawyers i don't wanna fight i just wanna focus on my life

Mom: Speaking of that you have a lot of explaining to do
I looked at her..

Mom: You impregnated someone Me: I know

Mom: Care to explain?

Me: It was just a fling that went wrong

Mom: Sandile you have to fix this, if you want to get Lihle back you
have to fix this

Me: I will get Lihle back for now i want to sort out Ya..

My phone rang, i leaned over and picked it up from the table. It
was Big Daddy. He has been a good business partner...

Me: Big Daddy

I stood up and walked out..

Him: So i have a report on your girlfriend

Me: Yes?

Him: She lives in town with the Detective I sighed..

Him: She also works at the complex just not sure which shop

Me: Really? Him: Yes but..Me: But?

Him: If i was you i would let this goMe: Why?

Him: We pulled a file on the Detective he is not as clean as they come

Me: Meaning?

Him: He is pretty a badass someone you don't wanna mess with and from what i have heard he would kill for his better half

Me: King Nkambule?

Him: Yes him.. I have heard encounters with him before and it didn't end well when i say badass better believe it. He puts 100% in whathe does and his boy Kruger is very good

Me: Thanks for the information

Him: I can provide guys for you but I am notgetting involved he has a lot of dirt on me tobury me alive

Me: I will use your guys but on someone elsefor now let Lihle have her fairytale story

Him: You will contact me thenMe: I sure will

I hung up..

.

. KING

I met up with my guy Kruger at our privatespot...

Him: Where you followed?Me: Who am i kanti?

He chuckled and gave me a handshake..Him: It's good to see you again man

Me: As always

We leaned against the car as he lit up acigarette..

Him: Last week i took down the sushi bar got acouple of stacks there

Me: still sneaky?

Him: I will never change

Me: Anything on my girl yet?Him: Just her normal day

I took out my phone..

Me: She should be knocking off anytime soonHim: She knocks off and goes straight home Me: I hope she doesn't know that she is being

tailed

Him: not at all

Me: and Nombuso? Him: She's good

He passed me the cigarette..

Me: I hope she won't open her mouth Him: But it was a long time ago

Me: Even so Lihle is going to lose it Him: Clingy?

Me: Sort off

Him: She's a beaut Me: She is ain't she?

I took out my gun and slowly approached some birds. I cocked it and started shooting at them, I didn't even get one..

Him: better luck next time Detective My phone started ringing.. It was Lihle..

Me: Babe

Her: Hey i hope i am not disturbingMe: It's okay

Her: I was letting you know that when i knockoff I'll be going to my see my Aunt

Me: Why?

Her: I wanna discuss something with herMe: Okay

Her: Let me go still at work

Me: I'll come and fetch you later then at yourAunt's place

Her: I can get a taxiMe: Are you mad?

She laughed..

Her: I'll call you thenMe: I love you

Her: I love you too

She hung up and i looked at Kruger..Him: I am not a baby sitter
Slash

Me: Just make sure she gets to her Aunt's placesafe

He sighed..

Me: And never ever call me Slash that namedied long time ago
I went and got into my car..

.

. YAYA

I looked at Brenda sitting on the couch cryingher eyes out. She has
been crying for the past10min and it was annoying now..

Candice: It doesn't smell that bad BrendaHer: Come and sit next to
me

Candice and i looked at each other..

Me: The antibiotics will help soon don't worry

Candice: And look at the bright side you made R3000 just for two nights

Candice and i we get girls from school who are financially stranded and we make them sleep with Big Daddy's clients at the club on weekends. One night they make R1 500 and i get R1 000 from each girl. Brenda is my very first girl and she still feels bad by what she did..

Brenda: I have an STI Me: It will clear soon

Brenda: I shouldn't have slept with him without a condom!

I rolled my eyes and threw myself on the couch...

.

. LIHLE

I was waiting for the last customer to pay so that we can close Nombuso was waiting at the door. I work at exact now, I'll be working here until next year when i decide to go to school. It's a good way to keep myself busy and make extra money i don't wanna be dependant on King. He has been a good boyfriend and he is the one who got me this job. Nombuso is the manager, she is the one who is training me and she is very sweet. I looked at the customer.

Me: Thank you very much Mam' She took the plastic from me..

Her: You have a very beautiful smile Me: Thank you

She made her way to the exit and Nombuso dropped the door halfway.

Me: Shuuuu! What a day She approached me..

Her: Next time wear flat shoes

Me: I will keep that in mind

Her: Now take your till then go to the back i will print the paper for you on how much you made

Me: Thank you

I took my till and went to the back waiting for her..

She came in after a minute..Her: Here

Me: Thank you

Her: Your till made R2 000 today we don't count the card purchases just cash

Me: Okay

Her: Now you must count from your till the 2000 and put it away it's the money that we going to bank tomorrow, after counting the 2 000 your till must be left with R 200

Me: Okay

Her: You count the R2 00 notes first, then the

R100 notes and so forth
Me: Okay i got it
I sat down and she sat at her working station next to me opening her laptop..

Me: Is that your baby?

Her: Yes his name is Sboniso
Me: He is cute

Her: He is 6 months old
Me: Wow..

I looked at the baby..

Me: definitely doesn't look like you
Her: He looks like his Father

Me: His father must be a catch
She kept quiet..

Me: Did i say something inappropriate?
She shook her head no..

Her: count the cash Me: Yes Mam'

.

To be continued [09/29, 11:07] Ron: ¥51LIHLE

I didn't go to see my Aunt right after work Nombuso went to spur wanted some takeaways saying that she's too tired to cook and i decided to go with her. While we waited for the takeaways i had 2 cocktails, and then i had a glass of wine. Even though King and i agreed that i won't be drinking anymore, unfortunately i haven't kept to my end of the deal. While he was at work i got a few bottles and drank in the house, having a job that keepshim away a lot i had the freedom to drink. I likewine because it relaxes me and keeps my mindfrom thinking a lot, it offloads the depressing

thoughts that engulf my mind sometimes. Nombuso looked at me as i was drinking..

Her: Slow down tomorrow i am opening the store with you i don't want you to get a hangover, wine has a terrible hangover.

Me: don't worry ill drink water when i get home She looked at the time..

Her: I have to get to my Niso Me: What time is it?

Her: 18:00

Me: Shoooooot!! Her: What?

Me: I have to call my boyfriend

I opened my bag and got my phone out, i already had 3 missed calls from him and one message:

"Lihle where are you"

I called him..

King: Lihle where the hell are you?Me: I didn't go to my Aunt's place

King: I long realized that.. Where are you?

Me: I am still at the complex at spur withNombuso

King: don't move i am on my wayMe: okay

I hung up..

Nombuso: I guess i should go my Fiancé is hereto fetch me too

Me: Okay.. You know we should have a doubledate dinner kind of thing

She stood up...

Nombuso: I am still your boss njaloI laughed..

Nombuso: See you tomorrow at 7:30

Me: Okay

Nombuso: I'll go get my takeaway Me: Okay I'll see you tomorrow

Nombuso: go easy on the wine Me: I will

She smiled and walked away. I waited for King for almost an hour while they kept those glasses of wine coming. I could feel now that I was getting out of it..

King walked in and I took the glass of wine and hid it under the table, I waited for him to spot me. I closed my eyes and opened them again I hope he doesn't notice that I am slightly drunk..

He came to me.. Him: Hey

Me: Hey

Him: Thought you were with your colleague Me: She left an hour ago

Him: Sorry i took long Me: it's fine you here now

I handed him my bag and tried to stand up, i fellback on the chair a few times..

He looked at me, hate it when he looks at melike that..

Him: Are you drunk?Me: No i am not

Him: So says the glass of wine under the tableI sighed.. Nice going with hiding it.

We walked out to his car, i was following him ashe led the way.

Unfortunately he didn't open the door for metoday. I opened and got in, he got in on the other side and we drove home in silence..

I was starring out of the window and he was concentrating on the road. I felt like I disappointed him a lot, i mean we spoke about

this and I gave him my word that i will stop drinking but here i am now going back on myword..

.

. YAYA

I was cooking when I heard the door bell beingrang. I put the cloth on the side and went to open the door, i was surprised to see Sandile standing there..

Me: Ndile

Him: can i come in? Me: Ummm yes i guess

He made his way in and i closed the door withmy heart already on my knees. He turned andlooked at me.

Him: Can we talk?I nodded..

Me: Let me just switch off the stove

I went and switched off the stove as he sat down...

Me: would you like something to drink? Him: No thanks i am fine

I went and sat down too.. Him: Look Yaya i am sorry Me: Ohw

Him: You are right Lihle shouldn't matter to me anymore

I kept quiet and let him continue.

Him: It wasn't right for me to treat you that way you a good person
and you didn't deserve what I did to you

Me: It's fine

He looked around..

Him: All i am trying to say is that can you please

give me another chance?Me: ummm..

Him: if you are worried about the Nkabindething it's okay i forgive you

Me: Just like that?

Him: I am not a Saint either i have done terriblethings and you forgave me i forgive you too

That was just weird, i found it very weird for himto forgive me without any repercussions..

Him: I want you to come back home i want myfamily close to me. You and the baby

I faked a smile..

.

. LIHLE

I was in the bedroom taking off my clothes andhe was taking off his watch while still looking atme like he had something to say. He

unbuttoned his shirt..

Him: For how long have you been drinking?Me: I don't understand that question.

Him: For how long have you been drinking?Me: King please.. I am not drinking

Him: so says the bottles in the guest room under the bed

Me: are you keeping tabs on me?He didn't say anything..

Me: King I am not one of your cases! A suspect!Don't treat me like that!

Him: You lying to me!

Me: seriously i can't do this with you right now

I made my way out of the bedroom. I went to the kitchen and got the cutting board with a knife, i took out Peppers and an onion then started chopping. I heard him make his way in,he hugged me from the back.

Him: I am not fighting with you

He kissed my neck while I ignored him, his hands got the knife from my hand and he threw it in the sink. He continued kissing me on my neck with his hands trying to unbuttoned my pants.. I put my hand around his neck as his tongue ran in circles on my neck. I later on lowered my hand and squeezed his manhood.. This will be our very first time making love to each other.

[09/29, 11:08] Ron: ¥52NDILE

I looked at Yaya peacefully sleeping as i was taking my clothes off about to join her. We had a nice meal and since it was late i decided to spend a night here, it was just me and her in the flat. My first thoughts as i looked at her was to strangle her, just squeeze the life out her. How can she fucken Sleep with Nkabinde while pregnant with my baby! Even if they used

protection that doesn't make the situation any better, the remaining fact is that this bitch and gold digger put my baby's life in danger. I cannot wait for us to go back to my place, i want to make her regret the day that her and Nkabinde double crossed me! As for Nkabinde only hell knows what i am going to do to him. I made my way to the kitchen to get a glass of water, i could feel that my anger was taking control i needed to calm myself down. Everyone who has ever double crossed me i am coming for them and they not going to believe it..

.

. LIHLE

King is amazing in every way sometimes I ask myself how many skeletons he has in his closet because really he cannot be this perfect, he has to come with problems of his own. I squeezed my breasts and bit my lower lip with my legs

around his neck and his head buried on my already wet cookie. He was working me 3timesbetter than Sandile has worked me down therein all the 10 years of our relationship. Both his hands were on my thighs squeezing them, whilst i felt the warmth and wetness of his tongue working it's way on my clitoris. The pleasure that i got from him doing that made my body to accept what he was doing, when hejust went all around i felt like pulling my braidsout that's how intense it was. He inserted his fingers and they worked their magic while his tongue still carried out it's purpose, as i was nearing to release my juices i pressed him harder against my clitoris and moaned.

Me: Ahhhhhhhhhh..

That went with the last breath i had in me. Afterthat he came back up, he reached on the side for the condom before he could open it i got upand decided to return the favour, i grabbed himand directed it inside my mouth. He pulled my

braids back as i worked on him. I knew i was on the right track when he closed his eyes and moaned, i went on and on until he stopped me and then rolled down the condom. Before he could enter me he went and wet my cookie first for the last time and then slowly pulled me to me. He slowly entered me and it's only then i got to realize how big he was, i gasped a little when he was fully in. Was a bit uncomfortable with the condom at first but as the pleasure kicked in one more time i started enjoying..

.

. YAYA

I woke up in the morning i looked beside me and Sandile was not around. I saw a few R100 notes and the house keys on top of my phone as i reached for it and sat up straight. I heard a knock at the door.

Me: Come in

The door opened and Candice made her way in..

Her: Good morning

Me: Look who it is i thought you wasn't living here anymore

She made her way to my bed and threw herself on it..

Me: Everything okay?

Her: Everything is fine just tired Me: I can see that

I got out of bed..

Me: Well i have to bath and go back to my house

Her: Your house?

Me: moving back in with Sandile Her: He is back?

I showed her the money..

Me: Yes he is

Her: What about Nkabinde?Me: What about him?

Her: I mean you and him?

Me: There's no "me and him" plus Sandile has already forgiven me for that

Her: wait! Sandile knows?I nodded..

Her: and he has forgiven you?Me: Yes

Her: That easily?

Me: what's your point?

Her: Don't get me wrong but i don't know anyguy who would forgive so easily after findingout that you were screwing his friend

Me: I think therapy and his medication areworking

She shook her head no..Me: What is it now?

Her: I am just thinking that i really don't wannafetch you from his house in a coffin

Me: you exaggerating

Her: for your sake i hope so

.

[09/29, 11:08] Ron: ¥53

(short - insert)KING

I looked at Lihle sleeping and then i looked at the time it was 23:00,i slowly took my hands offher and gently got out of bed. I took my phone and walked out of the bedroom to call Nombuso. It rang a few times before she picked up..

Her: It's 23:00 KingMe: I know

Her: What do you want?

I switched on the TV just so Lihle doesn't hear me and then i made my way to the kitchen..

Her: King what do you want?

Me: Thank you for giving Lihle the job

Her: The company gave her the position i didn't
Me: Still you did a lot on your part

Her: I don't even know why i am still doing you favours

Me: I know how you feel about me
Her: You have no idea!

Me: We need to talk about Niso
Her: He is my Son you hear me?

Me: He is my Son too!

Her: King leave me alone you put me through hell i want nothing to do with you!

Me: I am not asking for anything more other

than seeing my Son! I want a relationship with him

Her: Kruger has a perfect relationship with my Son!

She exhaled..

Her: Leave us in peace!

Me: You can punish me in many ways okay? But please don't use my Son against me!

Her: You must not have understood what i just said.. King leave us alone!

Me: Dammit Nombuso! That was a long time ago i am not about that life anymore i have changed!

Her: Let's tell that to your fiancé first who was hijacked and killed because of you

I took my phone from my ear and held it tight before carrying on with the conversation..

Her: King??

Me: I am still here

Her: If you don't want Lihle knowing the truth then stay away from me and my Son!

She hung up.. I walked to the living room and switched off the TV. I sat on the couch with my eyes closed as i dated back to that dark cold night..

FLASH BACK...

I looked at her as she struggled to get up with blood running down her legs, i quickly took off my jacket and tried putting it around her shoulders but she pushed me off..

Nombuso: I hate you King! I hate you with all my heart!

Me: I am truly sorry

Nombuso: Sorry will never fix me! Sorry will never make me forget about this!

She held on to the chair with her legs shaking, she wiped off her blood with her hand.

Nombuso: Ohhh my God please save my Son(crying)

Me: Baby you bleeding let me take you to the hospital

Nombuso: I said leave me alone! You did this! I will never ever forgive you!

She took off the engagement ring and threw at me..

Nombuso: Go! Go! And never come back i never wanna see you again you hear me?

Her breast was bleeding i could see how bloody her lace night gown was in that area..

The door opened and Kruger walked in..Me: What took you so long?

He looked at Nombuso..Kruger: Ohhh shit!!

Me: We have to get her to the hospital Nombuso: King leave!

Kruger: I think you should leave manMe: What?

Kruger: It's for the best.. I'll call you Kruger went up to her and picked her up..Kruger: I'll call you

He rushed out with her. I picked up the ring and looked at it as tears streamed down, why didn't i make it in time????

I snapped from my thoughts when I felt tears burning my eyes, i wiped them and stood up. I walked to the bedroom and Lihle was still fast asleep. I walked up to her side and held her hand..

Me: I hope i don't make the same mistakes with you
I kissed her hand..

.

.

YAYA

Things were tense between me and Sandile we were sitting on that couch and watching TV as if like we were strangers. I had put the small cushion on my tummy to avoid him from wanting to touch me. Ever since we finished eating a few hours ago, no word was spoken his focus was on what was playing..

I cleared my throat..

Me: I should go to bed i am tired Him: Good night

I stood up and put the cushion in it's place and slowly walked to the bathroom to bath before i go to bed. I ran the water while singing as i felt the temperature of the water..

Me: "My Exes and the Ohhhs they haunt me, likeghooooosts they want me to make 'em all.. Theywon't let go Exes and Oh's...

My knee was at the edge of the bathtub when i

felt something around my neck before i knew itI was on the floor, i couldn't scream. When i looked up i saw Sandile and i realized that i had a ligature around my neck and he was pulling hard.. He dragged me across the floor i couldn't do anything i was just trying to get it off as it was cutting through my skin..

To be continued. [09/29, 11:09] Ron: ¥54LIHLE

I woke up the following morning in a very good mood i was sure that nothing was going to ruin my day today. I was slightly in pain from what went down last night but I am not complaining King really worked me, It was just an amazing experience. He didn't force me to anything that i found uncomfortable we both shared and did

our favorite styles, i am even failing to put everything into words but I am very certain that I will never have such an experience with someone else other than him. I don't think there's any guy who can work me that way, thinking about what went down last night while taking a shower having water run down my skin with my shower gel making it slippery made me think of last night. Made me think of how everything went down.

After dressing up i made my way to the kitchen King was leaning against the cupboard while holding his mug, he didn't even notice me he seemed to be very lost in his thoughts. Today i was wearing pumps so they didn't make noise when I walked in, i went and stood next to him that's when he noticed me. He stretched his arm and put it around my shoulders, he planted a kiss on my forehead with his warm lips..

Him: Good morning

Me: Morning

Him: Ready to go?Me: Yes i am

He checked the time..

Him: At what time are you supposed to be atwork?

Me: 7:30

Him: We still have time.. Would you like somebreakfast?

Me: Just cereal

Him: I will make for you...hold hereHe gave me his mug..

I took a sip and the coffee was a bit strong..Me: Did you even put sugar?

Him: Yes Me: It's bitter

I put it away...

He had his back facing me he wasn't himself today..

Me: King of hearts

He turned and looked at me..Me: What's wrong?

Him: Nothing i am fine

I walked up to him and hugged him from the back..

Me: You not fine

He turned around and looked at me.Him: We have to talk

He seemed serious..Me: Sounds seriousHim: It is

I stepped back a little..

Me: You are scaring me.. Are you breaking up with me because i drank again?

He pulled me back to him..

Him: No i am not breaking up with you

He picked me up and placed me on the kitchen counter, he parted my legs and got in between them..

He put his hands on my cheeks and look at me deep in my eyes..

Him: I love you Me: I love you too

Him: Lihle i am not as perfect as you think Me: Are you another Sandile?

He chuckled.. Him: Never but.. Me: But?

Him: Remember the pictures you saw in my bedroom back when you were at my house of my Fiancé Sandra?

I nodded...

Him: She was hijacked and killed because of me

I got his hands from my cheeks..

Him: When I became a cop and i put in a 100% in everything that i did and got praises from the station I was obsessed with staying at the top so I went after the most notorious criminal known as "Big Daddy"

Me: Then what happened?

Him: I was warned but i never listened, i wanted to prove a point that i was not a fluke that i can take down the most feared criminal ever and when i did tail him and got dirt on him he started threatening me. I didn't take his threats seriously i mean i was a cop i thought that nothing could touch me so I had him locked up and that was a job well done from me.

Me: But?

Him: Even though he was locked up but his dirty work didn't follow him he had people go after my fiancé and unfortunately he had alliances at the station so he walked out a free man

Me: That's bad

Him: I knew i had to avenge my Fiancé's death she was my everything we were high school sweethearts so I ended up recruiting my own gang do you know the saying that says "Sometimes you have to fight the devil with a demon"

I nodded..

Him: For me to put him down i had to beat him at his own game

Me: Did it work?

He shook his head no..

Him: By then i had already moved on one year after Sandra's death i had already been seeing someone else

Me: Where you over her, Sandra?

Him: No i thought replacing her with someoneelse would help me deal with the loss

Me: So what happened to the other girl?

Him: She was also tortured by Big Daddy and his goons, they kidnapped her by then she waspregnant with my Son and we were engaged i really thought i could replace Sandra with her

My eyes widened..

Him: The night that i found her she was in a very disturbing state i still don't know what theydid to her she never told me but what i know Is that she hates me with passion she doesn't want anything to do with me not to even see mySon

Me: Where is she now?

Him: She was in Mpumalanga but after what happened she moved here in Gauteng and started seeing one of the guys who was in my

gang. At first it was just her seeking protection from him but along the way they fell for each other

Me: I am very sorry Him: It's life

Me: So you stopped going after the criminal? He nodded..

Him: I couldn't risk my loved ones getting hurt and killed
I put my hands around his neck..

Me: He will have his day and thank you for being honest with me

Him: A relationship with secrets is not a good one

We broke the hug..

Me: Better drive me to work i don't wanna belate

He put me down..

Me: Today i have to go to my Aunt's place need to check if i didn't get a letter i have to inherit allmy Mother's money

Him: What are you going to do with it?

I walked to the bedroom and he followed me..

Me: put it in a fixed account it will help me whenI have to go to school next year

I took my bag..

Him: One more thingMe: What is it?

He sighed and put his hands in his pockets..Him: Sandile is back

I dropped my bag on the floor..

.

. YAYA

My body was very sore and I was shivering

thank God it's summer or else i would've suffered from hypothermia. After Sandile dragged me across the floor last night with the ligature rope around my neck, he took off all my clothes and whipped me with the ligature. Every whip teared through my skin, i felt the pain just imagine someone using all their strength on you. Taking all their anger and frustrations on you, using all the strength that they have on you. You can never begin to understand the pain that i was feeling. He mostly did the beating on my buttocks and then after he put the ligature around my neck and tied it to the leg of the bed. He put a blanket over me and I am grateful for the carpet that we have in the bedroom so i didn't get much cold. I cried silently and for the first time in my life i wished nothing but death, it's useless confiding to my Mother because she is not going to feel sorry for me instead she will insult me and make everything seem as if like it's my fault. I only started falling asleep at

dawn when I had cried enough and i had notears anymore...
I was woken up by a stinging sensation arising from my buttocks
when I was fully awake it's only then i realized that I was being
penetrated, Sandile was laying behind me on the floor and having
his way with me taking it from behind. It was painful no lie
especially after he had whipped me last night in that area and then
this morning he decides to sexually pleasure himself.. I didn't
wanna give him the satisfaction of showing him that he was hurting
me but it was very painful that i couldn't hold back. He was very
close to me that I could feel his breath at the back of my neck, he
extended his hand and put it in my throat. I couldn't feel the
ligature around my neck anymore which means he had taken it off.
He lowered his hand started squeezing my nipples in a very painful
way..

Me: Sandile please.. (crying)

I could feel from how he was moaning that he was enjoying himself, what sick bastard could find pleasure in torturing someone like this? Sandile is truly sick!

He pumped harder and faster as he still squeezed my nipples..

Him: Fuck!!!

He brought his hand back to my throat and strangled me as he shot his load inside of me, his moan next to my ear is something i will never forget. Something that is going to traumatize me and haunt me for the rest of my life..

.

.

To be continued

I am still having that situation with my phone, gonna try and have it checked next week.

No edits

[09/29, 11:09] Ron: SEASON FINALE

¥55

LIHLE

I was standing in my workstation that i share with one of my colleagues. Since the shop is big and gets busy a lot i heard it gets busy mostly on the 15th, 22nd, 25th, 27th, 30th, and 31st of each month since those are the pay days for most employees. I was lost in the world of my thoughts busy thinking to myself how can they let Sandile go? He is not mental stable enough to function in a society with normal people! He belongs to be isolated, he belongs to be locked away where he won't hurt anyone. Now I will be forced to look over my shoulder, i will be forced to carefully limit the places i visit i cannot visit places that he knows it will be easy for him to get me. This is depressing thinking of what he might do to me if he catches me, i cannot even begin to imagine it..

I put my hand on my cheek with my elbow resting on the counter as i exhaled, this is a disaster i don't wanna lie. I only got back to the world of the living when a customer started snapping their fingers right in my face..

Me: Sorry..

Her: Are you okay? Me: Yes i.. I am fine Her: I am here to payMe: Your card please

Her: i can pay my foschini account here right?Me: Yes we are a division of the TFG stores

She handed me her card and i logged in the system..

Me: How much would you like to pay?Her: How much do i owe?

Me: let me see

(1min later)

Me: Installment R150 and total due is R80Her: Balance?

Me: R1000

Her: R250 pleaseMe: R250 it is

Her: So you guys get bored around here? I sawhow you were day dreaming

Me: Agh it's very quiet people are still broke

Her: only a few days until the 25th then peoplewill come

Me: Cash or are you going to use your card?Her: Cash

She handed me the money..Her: any vacancies?

Me: Nothing at all but i will ask my manager Her: okay i will see you next month when I have

to pay again

I gave her the receipt and her account card..Her: thank you

Me: have a nice day

Her: Good luck with the boredomI laughed as she walked away..

My colleague Baso came up to me..Her: Hey

Me: Hey

Her: Nombuso is asking for you at the backMe: Okay

I made my way to the back and she was sitting at her desk with her pants slightly raised up above her left knee level, i was shocked to see how big her knee was and it had scars that showed she was operated a lot of times on that knee..

She was facing up with her eyes closed and biting her lower lip..

Me: Uhm you called for me?

She took a deep breath and then exhaled, she opened her eyes and looked at me with tears streaming down..

Me: are you okay?

Her: I have to go to the Doctor my knee has started again, see how swollen it is?

I looked at it and it looked pretty bad..

Her: I had already called my Fiancé he is on his way to fetch me

I nodded repeatedly i could see that she was in pain..

Me: What happened?

Her: a few years ago i was repeatedly bashed with a hammer on my knee, doctors didn't want to amputate it. I had more than 5 surgeries

but the pain i go through everyday with thisknee i wish that they could've amputated it

She chuckled after saying that..

I look at Nombuso and physically she has scars,she has this big scar from above her right ear all across to her head. That scar is very visible because she has short hair.. My first thoughts are that she might be just like me, she seems like she has been abused physically and emotionally..

We heard knock at the door and then the door opened. Some guy walked in. Not your typical ordinary guy he does look like a thug, i wonder ifhe is the one who is abusing her..

He greeted and then walked up to her..Him: It has started?
She nodded..

Her: I have to go to the Dr Him: will you be able to walk?

Her: I'll try

He helped her to get up from the chair, standing was a bit difficult for her especially when her leg had to support her weight. She tried to balance by putting more weight on her right leg..

Her: You know i curse the day that i met him! Fell in love with him!

And..

Her lower lip was trembling i could see that she wanted to cry..

Him: let's go

Whoever did this to her is another Sandile, such men disgust me to the core. I hope the guy who did this to Nombuso is rotting in hell..

.

. YAYA

Nkabinde looked at me i could see the concern

in his eyes as he ran the stethoscope on my chest..

Him: how are you feeling now?

I looked across the room and Sandile was standing there leaning against the door frame with his arms folded.

Me: I feel better

My voice was scratchy, my throat was dry..

Nkabinde: you appear very weak the IV will kick in soon

I slowly nodded..

Nkabinde looked at Sandile..

Nkabinde: she will have to soak her

body in warm salt water at least twice a day for all the bruises

Sandile nodded..

Nkabinde: I have brought with me pain killer too, you will drink when you feel pain

Me: Thank you

Nkabinde: I am done here i believe

Sandile: Thank you Nkabinde what would we do without you?

He walked over to put his hand on Nkabinde's shoulder..

Sandile: You are a good Dr always there to help in times of need

Nkabinde still had his eyes fixed on me.. Nkabinde: Just doing my job

Sandile: Thank you old friend Nkabinde: You are welcome

Nkabinde packed his things..

Sandile: I will transfer the cash for you later on Nkabinde: No problem

Sandile walked him out..

I laid there on the bed just emotionless, when is all of this going to end?

Sandile walked back in with a smirk on his face..

Him: could've seen how your boyfriend is worried about you

I turned my head and faced the other way..Me: He is not my boyfriend

He sat on the bed..

Him: really? If i remember correctly you were bragging about him in at the hospital the otherday

Me: I was just using him for money since you were gone i just said that to make you jealous

(Silence)

Him: Yaya you and i were coming alright what happened?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Him: The baby you carrying is it mine or his?I shrugged my shoulders..

Me: There's no baby anymoreHim: Say that again?

Me: There's no baby anymore

Him: You are useless! Just to think i almost had a baby with you!

He spat on my face and i closed my eyes..Him: You disgust me!

He stood up..

Him: don't let boredom kill you, soon Lihle will join you!

.

. KING

I called Kruger needed to hear the latest on Lihle..

Kruger: Hey man

Me: took long to answer your phone

Kruger: Ya i am kind of held up Me: With?

Kruger: Just a bit of an emergency

Me: I am paying you to keep an eye on my girlfriend what emergency could you possibly have?

He cleared his throat.. Me: What is it man?

Kruger: Had to take Nombuso to the Dr Me: Is she alright?

Kruger: Her knee

I rubbed my eyes with my fingers.. Me: What is the Dr saying?

Kruger: The radiologist is still taking an X-ray I leaned back on my chair..

Me: How is she holding up? Kruger: She is in pain

I didn't know what to say..

Me: It's fine man if she's not feeling good you can take the whole day off

Kruger: Thank you ManMe: don't mention it

I hung up the phone and ran my hand across my face..

.

To be continued

[09/29, 11:10] Ron: SEASON FINALE

¥56

NDILE

I went to the complex after one of Big Daddy's guys called me and told me that he tailed Lihle and she is working at Exact i needed to see if it was true. I got there and the store was a bit empty, i went around checking a few clothes. I

looked at the counters and i couldn't see Lihle maybe she's at the back. After a while one of the sales assistants came to me..

Her: Good afternoon Sir Me: Afternoon

Her: May i be of any assistance? Me: not really i am still looking

Her: You will call me when you need help Me: No problem

She walked away.. Me: Err..

She came back..

Her: Did you say something?

Me: Ummm can i ask you something? Her: Yes of course

Me: Does Lihle work here? Lihle Cele?

Her: Ohw Lihle yes she works here just went out

for lunchMe: Is it?

Her: Yes.. Can i take a massage? Or you canwait for her

Me: No it's fine I'll come back some other time iam in a hurry

Her: Okay

Me: Thank you again for your assistanceHer: You welcome

I walked out.

If i can't have Lihle then King must forget he won't have her too.

Lihle and Yaya i wanna dealwith them accordingly even if i go to jail after this or a mental institution i don't care! As long as i know that they 6 feet under i will have peace..

.

.

KING

I found myself at some park it was a beautiful park and it was very peaceful. I looked around and the grass was very green and rich, the trees provided good shade and the sun was shining very bright. I wondered what i was doing here, here in such a peaceful place. I looked around again and i swear there was something so humbling about this place, does such a place exist on earth? I heard a voice call out to me. I turned around and i saw some woman wearing all white sitting at a nearby bench, i walked over to her. She looked at me and gave me a warm smile..

Her: Finally we meet

I looked at her all confused..Her: MaCele

She extended her hand to me, i walked closer and gave her a handshake. I sat down..

Me: You are.. Does that mean i am..Her: No you are just dreaming

Me: Wow such a peaceful placeHer: It is isn't it?

I didn't understand what was happening..Her: Listen we do not have time

I turned and looked at her..

Her: I need you to stop protecting LihleMe: I don't understand

Her: I need you to stop protecting her having her followed at work and everything

Me: But if I don't then Sandile will get to her and possibly kill her

She nodded with a smile..

Me: No i cannot have that he is going to kill herHer: No it's going to be the other way round

I was confused..

Her: Do not put your gun in the safe anymore from now on put it in the drawer on the other side where she sleeps

Me: Mrs Cele I am not going to let Lihle kill him..She has suffered enough and..

Her: It's bound to happen this way.. By Lihle's hand Sandile should die

Me: The future is not written in a stone

Her: In deed but that's the only way Lihle is going to have peace
She stood up..

Her: Don't forget put your gun in the drawer She walked away but stopped..

Her: Ohw and one more thing.. Please tell her about Nombuso. Yes she's stubborn and everything but when honesty comes from you it will be easier for her to forgive you than she would when hearing it from someone else especially that someone else being Nombuso

herself

She smiled at me one last time..Her: You have my blessings

Me: can i ask you something?She looked at me..

Me: Why appear to me? Why not avenge your death? I mean i heard dead people are pretty powerful

She laughed while shaking her head..

Her: I died a painful death but i am a peaceful person i do not take revenge i must be pure from such until i get to the other side

I nodded..

Her: Don't tell Lihle about this she is still trying to accept my death if you bring this up she will never forgive you but she is going to hate you forever

Me: I understand

Her: Goodbye

She walked away until she disappeared..

.

. LIHLE

I went back to the store after I had my lunch at King pie Baso was standing at the counter..

Baso: You are back Me: Yeap

Baso: Did you enjoy your lunch?

Me: Salami & cheese pie yes i enjoyed it thank you

I walked to the back..

Baso: Before i forget someone was looking for you

Me: who?

Baso: Some guy

Me: King?

Baso: He didn't say his name Me: Ohw

Baso: Come to the floor i wanna go to lunch too

Me: Is Nombuso back? Baso: No

I went to the counter as she went to the back, i picked up the phone and called King..

King: My chocolate muffin

Me: Hey uhm did you come to the store today? King: No i didn't..

Why?

Me: I think Sandile was looking for me when i went out for lunch

King: Are you sure? Me: Yes

King: Don't go out to the store anymore until I

send someone over Me: Okay

I hung up..

.

. KING

I put my cellphone away as Fikile made her way in, she threw some files on my desk..

Me: and?

Her: More work for you Me: Can't Shongwe do it?

Her: Shongwe is handling his cases I went through the files..

Me: What are you busy with? Her: certifying documents Me: I have a job for you

Her: King i am not your personal assistant
Me: relax its Detective work

She folded her arms..

Me: I need you to go to the complex with a few lieutenants

Her: For?

Me: i need you to keep an eye on Lihle until she knocks off

Her: King..

Me: Just for today please
Her: What is this about?

Me: Please Fikile i wouldn't ask if it wasn't important

She sighed..

Her: until what time?
Me: 17:00

Her: At least 3 hours

Me: Thank you She walked away..

I sorted out the files when one fell the papers inside came out. I picked them up and one paper in particular was written "We spoke about this, stop protecting her" the writing disappeared after reading..

.

To be continued

[09/29, 11:10] Ron: SEASON FINALE

¥57

LIHLE

King came to fetch me after work so that we can go to my Aunt's and then go home. He was awfully quiet in the car but what am I saying?

He hasn't been himself ever since he told me about his past, i don't think he has fully forgiven himself over what happened to his Fiancé or rather both the women in his life that he let

down. He parked next to the gate and then we got out of the car making our way in. I wasn't happy with the state of how my Mother's house was, there was a lot of trash around the yard and the grass clearly showed that it hasn't been cut and trimmed. Her flowers were sadly dying it was just messy. As if that wasn't disturbing enough the outside basin that was next to the tap where we usually rinse the laundry had dirty water. There were baby nappies all around and the outside trash bin was full, it was just very dirty..

We stood at the door and I knocked until I heard my cousin Ntokozo saying come in. I opened the door and we made our way inside.. The sink was full of dirty dishes, the dish cloth had flies dancing on it there was also dirty pots on the stove and it had a bit of a disturbing smell like something was rotten. I was embarrassed especially with King having to witness everything the oven baking Pans were

ontop of the counter dirty. We made our way to the living room where Ntokozo was sitting on the couch watching TV and breastfeeding her baby who had mucus all over her face and porridge debris..

We greeted and sat on the couch..I looked around..

Me: uphi uMamncane? (where is your Mom)

Her: She went out to the Tarven said she's going to buy some beers

Me: I am here to check if no letter from my Mom's work came for me

She shook her head no..Me: That's strange

Her: Would you like some tea? Me: No thank you we not staying

Her: We no longer good enough for you neh?Me: I didn't say that i am just in a hurry

Her: Sho!! You not even going to stay nyana?She clapped her hands..

Me: I am from work and i am tired i just wannago home and rest
She laughed as she shoved her breast into thebaby's mouth again, i could see King was getting very uncomfortable..

King: I'll be in the car

He stood up and walked out..

Her: kumnandi ukuba wuwe neh? (it's nice to beyou)

Me: Ngani manje? (with what)

Her: I am just saying that your cookie works foryou

I sighed..

Her: Hai Phela nakho not long ago you werewith Sandile and now you are with a cop aiimntaka Auntie langaphantsi

kuyakusebenzela (your vagina is working for you)

Ntokozo has always been jealous of me..

Her: Your Mother has always made you seem perfect always had something good to say about you making us look like we were useless kodwa naku you are not in school all you doing is changing rich guys faster than you change your pad

I stood up..

Me: I didn't come here to exchange words with you

Her: Hamba Lihle Cele kodwa know that Aidskills

I didn't answer her i just walked out. On my way to the car while I was at the passage our so ever nosey neighbour Mam'Jane called out to me..

Her: Pssss Lihle!

I went closer to the fence..Me: Mam'Jane

Her: Kunjani? (how are you)Me: Ngiyaphila (i am well)

Her: Awusesemuhle (you look beautiful)Me: Thank you

Her: Is that Sandile at the gate? Did he buy another car? Phela umntaka Khumalo is rich

I faked a smile..

Me: Mam'Jane not to sound rude but i am verytired i just wanna go home and sleep

Her: Kodwa banjani nje? (how are they)Me: endlini? (in the house)
She nodded..

Me: Bakahle (they are fine)

Her: Weeeeh! Phela your Aunt hai!!Here we go..

She got closer..

Her: Bathi nje she's going to a witch doctor for you

Me: for me?

Her: Yebo so that you don't get your Mother's money! Uyayifuna
(she wants it)

Me: Ohw

Her: vula amehlo nontombi (open your eyes) Me: Thank you for
the information Mam'Jane

Her: Don't be scarce nawe! This is your Mother's house look at how
dirty it is when MaCele was still living here this house was clean
inside and out

I nodded..

Me: That's very true

Her: All that your Aunt is good for is going to the Tarven! uNtokozo
yena uLala k'phela (Ntokozo is always sleeping)

Me: That's sad

Her: Hai bayimoshile indlu kaCele (they have ruined this house)

Me: They have

Her: Let me not keep you greet Sandile for me Me: I will

She walked back to the house followed by her Dog..

.

. YAYA

MaKhumalo: Here you go I took the tea from her.

Me: Thank you

I was now laying on the couch with a pillow supporting my head and a big blanket keeping me warm. Sandile's Mother had arrived a few

hours ago and ever since she has been taking care of me, i saw a different side to her today. I tried sitting up straight but my buttocks were still burning..

Her: How are you feeling now? Me: I will be better

We heard the kitchen door opening and closing..

Her: That must be Sandile

My heart sank to my knees that's how much I am scared of him now, i was shaking and so was the cup that I was holding. We heard him whistling from the kitchen to the living room, he took off his cap..

Him: Ma i didn't know you were coming

He put his keys and his phone on the table. He came and sat next to me putting my feet on top of him and massaging them..

Ma Khumalo: Where are you coming from?

Him: Had a few errands to run
MaKhumalo: We need to talk
Him: Now?

MaKhumalo: Yes

Me: I'll go to the bedroom

Her: No it's fine you don't have to
Sandile: Sounds serious?

Her: It is

Him: What is it?

Her: Why udlala ngabantwana babantu kaso?(Why are you mistreating other people's children like this)

He remained quiet..

MaKhumalo: uLihle ukushiyele zona lezi? (didLihle leave you for this)

He still remained quiet..

Her: Are you even taking your medication?

The tough Sandile was quiet..

Her: You saw how i suffered and you putting these girls through the same thing your Father put me through

Me: I am his Son after all! Her: Nazo ke! (here we go)

Him: I am going to take a nap call me when you want me to drive you home

He got up and walked to the bedroom.. MaKhumalo: Yey wena! I am still talking to you She stood up and followed him..

.

. LIHLE

I was in the bedroom changing my clothes to amore comfortable outfit so that I can start preparing dinner, my phone rang it was Sylvia i answered..

Me: Hello Her: Hi Lihle

Me: How are you?

Her: Good.. Listen i am trying to get hold of myBrother he is not answering

Me: Uhm I will check where he isHer: Tell him to call me

Me: I will Her: ThanksMe: Bye

King walked in just as i put my phone on thebed..

Me: Your Sister just called me says she's been trying to get hold of you

Him: I must've forgotten my phone in the carHe closed the door and leaned against it..

Me: What's wrong you haven't been yourself

He kept quiet for a while..Me: King??

Him: Remember I told you that there was someone else in my life after Sandra?

Me: The one you have a baby with?He nodded..

Him: I didn't tell you who it isI looked at him..

Him: It's Nombuso(After 30sec)

Me: Nombuso my??Him: Yes..

I couldn't believe what I was hearing..Me: You and Nombuso were??

Him: an item

Me: All her sufferings it's because of you

Him: Yes

I nodded while looking down.. Me: I'll go and start with dinner
I approached the door and he was still blocking it..

Me: I wanna go out please He looked at me..

Him: You are hurt

Me: I am not.. Why would I be? It was a longtime ago wasn't it?

Him: Lihle

He put his hand under my chin.. Me: Just move please

Him: Let's talk about this

Me: I don't wanna talk just move!

He moved.. I opened the door and walked out..

.

To be continued

[09/29, 11:11] Ron: SEASON FINALE

¥58

YAYA

I was laying on the bed starring at my phone Sandile had just went out with his Mom, MaKhumalo cooked a delicious meal for us before leaving. I needed someone to talk too and sometimes when you faced with such a serious situation your Mother is the first person you wanna call and confide in, because old people have seen a lot and have been through alot. I dialed her number and waited for her to pick up..

Mom: YayaMe: Ma

Mom: Kanti uthumela nini imali? (when are you sending money)

She sounded drunk...

Me: Soon I have just been busy

Mom: Ushada nini? (when are you getting married)

Me: Errr...

Mom: don't tell me you ruined things between you and that rich boy

Me: I didn't..

Mom: Good can't afford to have another useless daughter

I could see that it was useless confiding in her..

Mom: If you didn't call to send money then why did you call?

Me: I was just checking up on everyone Mom: si Right

Me: Okay Mom: Bye bye Me: Bye

My heart was broken into a million pieces i wishthere was someone out there who could understand how i feel, someone who could say "It's not your fault that all of this is happening toyou" someone who could.. I saw Sandile's phone on the dressing table. I slowly and carefully got out of bed. I was wearing a dress with no underwear, it's going to take a while forme to wear pants..

I went to get it and just went through it nothing interesting popped up other than Lihle's contacts. I thought for a while if it would be wise for me to take her number i mean we not friends and she hates but then, we both have experienced abuse in the hands of the same man. I saved her number in my phone and wentback to lie in bed...

.

. KING

I needed time to think so i drove around the neighborhood and came back home a bit late. I walked in and the TV was on but there was no one in the lounge other than a bottle of wine that was empty. This means Lihle drank when I went out. I made my way to the bedroom and it was empty, i wondered where she could be until i noticed that the bathroom door was closed. I went closer and listened carefully i heard her crying. I hate it when she drinks because alcohol sends her into a very depressing state where she can even hurt herself. I understand how she's feeling, being abused and then hearing that another woman was tortured because of me probably makes her see me in a different way.

I knocked...Me: Hlehle

She kept quiet.. Me: Please open

She kept quiet again for a while...

I kept on knocking without saying anything..Her: Go King!! Go and be with her

Me:what?

Her: Is this the reason why you moved backhere? So you can be close to her?

Me: Now you being insane

Her: were you with her now when you went out?Me: Are you hearing yourself right now?

Her: All you guys are the same! I don't knowwhy i expected you to be different!

Me: Lihle!

Her: Go leave me alone! I am better off dead!

I could kick down the door but i don't wanna scare her so right now i need to convince her toopen...

Me: Lihle please open the door so we can talk

Her: I don't wanna talk to you! Leave me alone go back to her!

Me: But i don't want her! I am not with her i am with you!

She continued crying and i didn't know what to say anymore...

I leaned against the door and exhaled i closed my eyes..

Me: MaCele help me get through to her

Her: I could just pull the trigger and end my life

I went back to the bedroom and searched for my gun, i couldn't find it. Now my heart started beating fast, i went back to the door...

Me: Lihle please don't do this to me please i love you

I was scared that she was locked up in there all alone with my Gun...

Me: Lihle please i love you so much you can't do

this to me

She continued crying...

Me: I know you hurting, i know that you see methe same way you see him but i am not him. I am not Sandile

Her: It's best this way

Me: Best for who? Best for you yes but whatabout me?what about me?

She kept quiet and I heard the gun going off..Me: No.. No.. No..

No!! Lihle!!

I kept banging on the door..

Me: You can't do this to me! Please..I was breaking..

.

. YAYA

I waited for Sandile to pass out i checked the

time on the alarm clock and it was 23:30, i removed his hand around me gently not wanting to wake him up..

Me: Sandile?

There was no response..

I got out of bed and quickly made my way to the bathroom, i ran the water in the basin. I opened the laundry basket and took out my sneakers and a jacket, i put them on and then made my way to the kitchen. I was careful in my steps as to not make a sound, i made my way to the kitchen while it was still dark and got the keys behind the bread tin. I put them there after locking the door before we went to bed. I made my way to the door with my hands shaking i tried to locate the right key, when i finally found it i put it in and then i felt his arm around my neck that scared me i actually screamed a little while dropping the keys..

Him: And where are we going?

I felt his gun at the back of my head and I have never been this scared in my life. I heard him pulling the trigger but nothing happened, all I heard was a "click click" sound. He turned me around and switched on the light while laughing... Him: I didn't load it lucky you I was crying..

He looked down..

Him: Seems like you pissed on yourself

He put his hand at the back of my head and pulled me closer, he forced the gun in my mouth it almost choked me..

Him: Next time you won't be so lucky

The coldness and the evil in his eyes just showed how heartless Sandile is. He lowered the gun...

Him: Clean yourself up and then come to bed

I nodded and made my way to the bathroom with him following me, i ran the water in the bathtub while he stood in the door way. I was still shaking.. When the water was enough i took off my clothes and got in the bathtub, he closed the door and made his way in...

Him: don't sit I didn't sit...

Him: I want to see you playing with yourself I looked at him..

Him: go on

i lowered my hand and started rubbing my Clitoris.. As I was doing that he lowered his boxers exposing his stiff cock, he started giving himself a hand Job....

Him: Where is my whore? Come on Yaya you can do better than that

With my other hand i went and squeezed my breasts...

Him: That's more like it!

.

. KING

I had taken the kitchen knife and tried to temper with the door handle, took a while though but i finally got it to open, i was scared to see what i awaited me on the other side. I opened the door and my gun was a bit far away from her, she was all cuddled in the corner i didn't see blood.

There's no blood. I went over to her and she was fine, when i saw the bullet hole through the wall i was relieved. I was relieved that i had tears in my eyes..

She slowly opened her eyes and looked at me...Her: King

Me: You alright.. You alright...

I picked her up and took her to the bedroom. From now on i am putting my gun in the safe,

fuck what MaCele said..

.

To be continued

[09/29, 11:12] Ron: SEASON FINALE

¥59

YAYA

everything seems better when you sleeping all the pain, the hurt, and the sorrows seem to leave you at that instant. Your mind and your heart rest from all the evils of this world then you wake up and it all comes back to you, the reality of your pain comes back times two.

I am deeply confused not forgetting that I am alone in this, my Mother doesn't care what happens to me all she cares about is the money that i give to her, that's all she cares about.

I could easily confide in Candice but i don't wanna stir up trouble for her, going to the cops doesn't seem like a good idea also I mean he

got out the last time he beat Lihle up. His mental illness works in favour for him but then again one cannot be evil forever his day is coming. I have missed school a lot and quite frankly i didn't care anymore, my life is more important than the dream i have been chasing..

I went to the living room the table was set had all kinds of goodies.

Sandile scared me when he spoke behind me..Him: Good morning

He kissed me on my cheek..Me: Morning

Him: Prepared breakfast for youMe: That's sweet

He held my hand and led me to the table, he opened the chair for me.

I sat down or half sat down since I was still in pain. He went and sat opposite me. I was

puzzled at what was happening..

Him: Take this as a new and fresh start for us I looked at him..

Him: I am sure you have learned your lesson with Nkabinde and i am sure that you will never do me bad like that, ever again

I slowly nodded..

Him: I love you Yaya and i still wanna marry you

I poured juice for myself as I didn't know what to say..

Him: Big Daddy told me that you are an asset to our business you have been giving us clients and i am very happy that you taking initiative in helping with the business

I faked a smile..

Him: You can call your family and tell them that we gonna come and visit

I almost choked..

Me: Today? Him: Yes today

I didn't know what to say..

Him: Look sweetheart i don't care where you come from i love you still and maybe i can help extend your house or something

Me: I.. I don't know what to say

He stood up with a sausage in his hand. He came to me and kissed me on my forehead..

Him: I will come back and get you i have to go for therapy

Me: Okay

He walked out..

.

. LIHLE

I remember the events that took place last night

i wasn't that very drunk as to not remember what happened.
Processing what happened just makes me feel some type of way, i
am very ashamed and i don't even know how i am going to face
King. I bathe and prepared myself for work with King not being
around i think he left early to go to work, probably wanted to avoid
me. I don't blame him i would avoid myself too if I was him..
I was drinking coffee in the kitchen when I heard a knock at the
door..

Me: coming

I put the mug down and went to open the door, it was Fikile..

Her: Hey Stranger Me: Hey

I let her in..

She came and hugged me.. Her: How are you?

Me: I am fine i guess

She put her hands on my shoulders..

Her: We should go out sometime and talk I nodded..

Her: Get your bag and everything i will drive you to work

Me: King's orders? Her: Yes

Me: Okay

I walked to the bedroom and she followed me.. Her: Everything alright between you guys?

Me: Not really

Her: What's wrong? I kept quiet..

Her: Lihle you my closest friend talk to me I sat on the bed..

Me: Sandile ruined me

She came and sat next to me..

Me: I am broken Fikile and i don't think i can be fixed

She put her head on my shoulder.Her: Don't say that

Me: And what's worse is that he got away with everything

Her: The law might favour him right now but he is going to have his day one way or another

Me: I just wish he could die the anger i have against him it scares me at times i would kill him given the chance without thinking twice

Her: Well thank goodness you not a killer She stood up..

Her: let's go

.

. KING

I went and sat on the bench again looking around..

Me: We should stop meeting up like this
Her: If you follow my orders we will

Me: She almost killed herself last night i am not going to put my gun in the drawer

Her: I understand

Me: No you don't.. Lihle is broken that guy broke her and i don't think i can fix her

Her: Patience is something you have always lacked

While i thought we were still sitting on the bench we were now walking next to the beach in Just a blink of an eye..

Her: If Lihle wanted to kill herself she would've done that when she heard i was murdered she

is stronger than you think

Me: You didn't see her last night

Her: King whether you leave your gun in the drawer or not Sandile will still die by Lihle's hand

Me: if she goes to jail?

Her: It's not murder if it's justified as self-defense

Me: Why don't I just take him down? Her: Then you will go to jail

She stopped and looked at me..

Her: Just be patient with her she will come around

Voice: King!.. King!.. King!!

I woke up and it was Shongwe who was waking me up..

Him: so unlike you to sleep at work

Me: didn't get much sleep last night

Him: let's go we have a homicide case to investigate

Me: Homicide?

Him: Dr Nkabinde was shot and killed at the garage of his house this morning when he was leaving for work get yourself some coffee we leaving in 5..

.

To be continued

[09/29, 11:12] Ron: SEASON FINALE

¥60

KING

I ran my eyes around the Doctor's house it looked good. We were in the lounge i was with his wife busy interrogating her and quite frankly her response to the whole matter was not the one I had anticipated from someone who had

just found out that she's a widow. I mean in most cases you would find the wife crying, shocked, confused and not wanting to talk but not this one. She had her hands folded, she had a very colourful doek covering her head, she had her spectacles on and her nostrils I was sure that smoke and fire were going to be dispensed from there. Shongwe was outside with the forensic team inspecting the crime scene, The Doctor's body was taken after a few minutes of us getting here. I had my small pad and pen ready to write what that woman was going to tell me..

Me: Please take me through your morning daily routine

Her: I am a housewife I quit my job when I had my second child
I nodded as she continued..

Her: I always wake up every morning run Nkabinde a bath, make him breakfast and then

kiss him goodbye

Me: Did you accompany him outside?Her: No

Me: Did you hear the gunshots?Her: Yes

Me: What did you do?Her: Nothing

Me: You did nothing?

Her: Detective it's not everyday that such things happen i didn't know that my husband was going to be killed this morning. When i heard the sounds i didn't think it was the gunshots i thought maybe a tire burst or something

Me: What made you to go out?

Her: When i didn't hear his car starting

Me: The garage is just next to the living room iam very sure that you must've heard people talking or heard him screaming as he got shot

because he was shot 4 times

Her: Heyi muntu!! I didn't hear anything

Me: I am sorry but you don't seem shaken by your husband's passing

Her: I am not because i expected it to happen! Me: Come again?

Her: My husband was not a Saint Detective he was having affairs with young girls i told him that one day his sins will catch up with him

I rubbed my eyes..

Me: MaNkabinde you will have to mind what to say because it's definitely going to make you a suspect to this Homicide case

Her: Then arrest me! Arrest me if you feel like i have committed a crime mina i am just stating what I feel

Me: I will have to take you down to the station for further questioning

Her: Let me call my lawyer

Me: If you are innocent you don't need a lawyer

Her: You are already treating me like a criminal so i have to call my lawyer

Me: Fine go ahead

.

. NDILE

Maano: That would be all for today Mr Khumalo Me: That's it?

Maano: Yes exactly an hour session Me: It felt so short

Maano: Are you telling me that now you are starting to enjoy the sessions?

I sat up straight..

Me: honestly speaking yes.. I think we should have more of these sessions

He sneered at me..

Him: You seem pretty jolly today?

I stood up from the chair and went to stare out of the window..

Me: You have a beautiful view hereMaano: It is indeed

(Silence)

Maano: Still taking your medication?Me: Twice a day

I turned around..

Him: Guess i will see you next weekMe: Next week it is Doc

Him: Have you spoken to Lihle?

I thought carefully before answering..Me: Unfortunately no

Him: Why? When you got out of here you werevery adamant about fixing things with her

Me: I decided that maybe i should give hersome time to deal with everything

Him: I see

Me: If there's nothing more then i will see younext week

Him: Same time and same placeMe: Thank you

I walked out..

.

. LIHLE

I was at the back sorting out some cellphone repair Nombuso was sitting at her desk busy onher laptop i kept on stealing glances at her..

(After 5min)

Her: Need some help?Me: Sorry?

Her: Do you need some help?

Me: Uhm no.. Baso showed me how to do cellphone repair

Her: Then stop stealing glances at me before your eyes fall out

Me: Sorry

It was quiet again and i kept on stealing glances at her..

Her: Lihle if you going to sit there and stare at me you might as well just take everything and go work at the front

Me: Yes Mam'

I stood up and took my things then went to the front. Why did I keep on stealing glances at her? I don't know but knowing that she was King's fiancé doesn't sit well with me. What if he decides to leave me for her? I am crazy, i am a drunk and they have a child. She's not bad looking and she a woman of integrity, little Miss

perfect might just take my person from me. Baso made her way to me...

Her: Lihle

I looked at her..

Her: Here finish off wiping the window so we can start displaying the Mannequins for the clothes that are on sale

Me: but you were doing it

Her: and i am asking you to do it when you are done with the cellphone repair i will start scanning from this side to see which clothes are on sale

I exhaled..

Her: Lihle you have to learn all the departments Dearie

Me: Fine!

I hate it when she does this taking advantage of me because i am new.

.
. YAYA

Sandile came to fetch me so that we can go and visit home. I was a bit nervous i mean home is not a place that i want him to see, it's not a place i want anyone to see.. We passed byat the mall to get a few things, he allowed me tobuy groceries for them. A lot of grocery.

Him: I want us to go pass by at the complexMe: We were just at the mall

Him: Ya i forgot to buy myself some 6 cans of Windhoek plus you can get yourself somethingpretty at Exact

Me: Okay

The whole drive to the complex i was glued on my phone, i kept on typing Lihle a message andthen deleting it. I didn't know what to say to herconsidering the fact that we aren't friends at all,

how is she going to respond? I am the girl who stole her man from her! I am sure she hates me. Sandile brought me back to reality when he told me that we have arrived..

Him: let's go

We both got out and made our way in..

It was my first time being in this complex and i must say it was a bit bigger than i had imagined..

We went to Exact was more as if like he had planned for us to go there because he just led the way straight to the store. It was not busy so we looked around..

Him: Seeing anything that you like? Me: Still looking

Him: Okay ill go and check socks

He left me and i kept on checking until i heard a familiar voice behind me..

Voice: Good morning Mam'

I turned around and it was Lihle she was busy trying to put a hat on the Mannequin's head..

Me: H.. Hi

She looked at me still holding the head of the Mannequin and as much as i didn't expect to see her, she didn't expect to see me too.

We kept on looking at each other until Sandile disturbed us..

Him: Sweetie Pie did you find something you like?

Lihle turned and looked at him, Sandile had a smirk on his face..

Him: Ohw hey Lihle

I saw Lihle's chest going up and down in a very disturbing manner.

Him: I didn't know that you were working here not a place i imagined for you, especially now since you with a Detective

I cleared my throat..

Me: I.. We can go.. I can't find somethingHim: Let's go

Lihle: You bastard!!

She did the unthinkable and started hitting Sandile with the head of the Mannequin, the first blow was hard though on his face because she struck him when he least expected and i saw blood coming out of his nose. While he burnt to attend to his nose Lihle struck him at the back of his head, she really used her strength because I heard the sound and i thought she really cracked his skull as Sandilewent down screaming in agony. I was standingthere all frozen..

Lihle: You son of a B** i am going to kill you!!!

.

[09/29, 16:33] Ron: SEASON FINALE

-

¥61

LIHLE

I only realized that I did damage to him when paramedics showed up to get him, there was blood on the ground and he had a concussion from all the blows he suffered. I was already in handcuffs and the store had undivided attention from people who came in to see what happened, Nombuso was not happy at all with what happened. The lieutenant was asking those people who were at the scene when everything happened to get the full story, and i was standing there with most eyes on me In handcuffs..

Lieutenant: So you were here when everything happened?

Yaya looked at me while holding Sandile's hand who was unconscious about to be taken to the ambulance..

Lieutenant: So what happened?

Yaya: She attacked him with the head of the mannequin repeatedly at the back of his head but she started with his face

Trust Yaya to do this! I didn't expect less from her I truly expected her to do this because she is Sandile's puppet..

Yaya: But that's because he provoked her I raised my head and looked at her.

Lieutenant: Provoked her? Me: Yes

The lieutenant didn't write that down..

Lieutenant: We didn't see that on footage all we saw was all 3 of you engaging in what seemed to be a calm conversation and then she lashed out on him, she attacked him repeatedly almost killing him right now you facing charges of attempted murder girl Nombuso walked closer..

Nombuso: Sorry Sir

The lieutenant turned and looked at her..

Nombuso: I am the manager here and Lihle is an employee she just started not so long ago so i wanna know what's going to happen now?

Lieutenant: She's definitely going to jail for attempted murder

Nombuso looked at me and then looked at the lieutenant again..

She sighed then walked away..

Yaya: Lieutenant you cannot arrest Lihle Lieutenant: Why not?

Yaya: She wasn't thinking straight when everything happened she acted on what he said to him

Lieutenant: What did he say if i may ask? Yaya: Err.. Uhm.. He..

(Pause) Lieutenant: Exactly!

I don't know why Yaya was defending me like this, I was very sure that she didn't like me..

Lieutenant: Let's go

He walked out with me I was looking down the whole time avoiding eye contact with bystanders until we got to the police Van..

.

. NTOKOZO

My Mother showed up later on holding a bottle of beer she sat down..

Me: How did it go?

Mom: Aii she wanted a lot of money Me: Mama mara why couldn't you pay? Mom: 350 for consultation?

Me: But she is said to be the best.. Kanti yini? You don't want to get this money? I mean Lihleis supposed to get 50 000 a month for 2 years

so says the letter do you know what we can do with such money?

Mom: I am well aware of that Ntokozo! Ucabanga ukuthi angazi?

(you think i don't know)

She put the beer on the table..

Mom: I will see tomorrow we just short with R150

I laid back on the couch. I really want Lihle's lifemy cousin seems to have luck wherever she turns and I have been beaten by life in all corners, it's time that i live nice too. The Sangoma is said to be a powerful one and i hope she helps us..

Me: Next week Sassa money for the baby is coming in so i will give you the R150

She nodded..

.

.

YAYA

I looked at Sandile laying on that hospital Lihle should've killed him!

My phone rang, it was Candice. Me: Hey babe

Her: Babe where are you?

Me: I am a bit caught up with something

Her: I just called to find out how you holding up especially with Nkabinde

Me: What about him? Her: You haven't heard? Me: Heard what?

Her: Nkabinde is dead he was shot at his house this morning

Me: What??

Her: I am very sorry i know that he.. You.. Know..

I hung up my phone and looked at Sandile there was no doubt that he did this, it's him and no one else..

I walked closer and my first thought was to finish off what Lihle started and that is strangling him to death..

.

. LIHLE

I was sitting at the reception looking down when King walked in, he was with his colleague and some woman. He looked at me all shocked then he turned to his colleague..

King: You can go ahead i will be right there They walked away and he came to me..

Lieutenant: She's my prisoner Detective King: Prisoner?

Lieutenant: Yeap attempted murder! King: Att.. What?

He sat on the chair next me and looked at me while i looked down..

Him: Look at me I kept quiet..

Him: Look at me!

He put his hand on my chin and forcefully lifted my head so i could face him and i have never seen him this mad, his eyes said it all..

Him: Attempted murder?

Me: I attacked Sandile at the store with a mannequin head until he had a concussion

He stood up and grabbed my arm making me to stand up too..

King: Borrow me your Prisoner for a couple of minutes

The lieutenant nodded..

He pushed me outside..

Him: Do you understand what's going on? You are faced with a charge of attempted murder! You are going to jail!

I swallowed hard..

Him: Did he attack you? I shook my head no..

Him: I can't even get you out with self defense

He paced around a little and then came back to me..

Him: Little why do you keep on doing this to me?

I looked down with tears falling, I have been nothing but a disappointment to him..

Him: All I want to do is to just love you and I expect the same from you.. Nothing more!

I do love him just that I keep on getting myself in situations that I should've prevented..

Him: What's going to become of me when you go to jail did you ever think of that? Sandile got you exactly where he wanted you He calmed himself..

Him: I love you Lihle but this i can't do anymore I looked at him.. I shook his head no..

Him: I am done!

Me: King No please..

He gently grabbed my arm and marched me back inside, i felt like my heart was going to stop. I felt hot flushes on my face as tears fell, i cannot lose King. I looked at him as he left the room, he was hurting and so was I but i was hurting more how did this get out of control?

What's wrong with me?

.

.

TO BE CONTINUED

[09/29, 16:33] Ron: SEASON FINALE

¥62

YAYA

I drove up to my house after seeing Sandile. I had to drop off the groceries that we bought earlier on and see how everyone was doing. I got a positive and enthusiastic response when the car drove into the yard, My mom was screaming her lungs out so that Neighbours can come out and see. The house was pretty much the same except for the fact that the grass was very tall and it looked very dull..

My Sister and her kids walked to the car, she hugged me..

Thandeka: Ohh my goodness Yara such a beautiful car

She came and hugged me..

Ma: Kanti where is everyone to see? Thandeka: Come inside we will have some tea

Me: Well i have brought some groceries so we can make something to eat

I opened the trunk and everyone helped with offloading the groceries. The kids were so happy to see eggs, bread, Russians, etc..

We walked inside and my Grandmother was sitting at the kitchen..

Ma: Koko bona kuze bani? (look who came) I walked close to her..

Me: Koko it's me Ayanda Koko: Ayanda?

Me: Yes Koko

She looked at me for a very long time and i saw tears clouding her eyes..

Koko: Kodwa Yaya wasilahla (You abandoned us)

Me: That's not true Koko

Ma: Hai Koko she's busy lapha eJozi working

for us

Me: I came with groceries

Koko: Hau! For a change i will eat good food

Thandeka was already putting everything in thecupboards..

Ma: Mara Thandeka aren't you embarrassed?Thandeka stopped and looked at her..

Mom: Your little sister is bringing in food for you and your kids, her car is parked at the gate.Aren't you embarrassed being dependent on your little sister?

Thandeka ignored her..Me: Mama

Ma: Mama what? Iqiniso mele likhulunywe! (thetruth has to be spoken)

I took out R50 and gave it to her..Me: Get a few beers

Ma: Awuzwa ke.. That's why you are my favourite
She walked out. I only did that to get rid of her, I walked up to
Thandeka.

Me: I can help you cook
Her: You don't have too
Me: Come on I want too
She smiled..

Me: Or maybe sit with Koko and the kids I will cook, give the kids
some snacks

Her: Yaya you don't have too, you already done a lot

Me: I want too.. Come on

Her: Let me cook and you relax
Me: No you relax I'll cook

Koko: You girls will never change still fighting over cooking

We looked at each other and laughed. My little niece came up to me and pulled my dress..

Her: Mamncane bona (Aunty look)She showed me a picture..

Me: Woow it's beautiful

Thandeka: I am teaching her how to draw and write since i don't have money to send her to preschool

I looked at her shoes and i wasn't happy they had holes..

Me: Maybe tomorrow we can go to town to get a few clothes for the kids

Her: Yaya NoMe: I insist

Her: You already doing a lot

Me: If i can't spend my money on my family then it's no use

Her: I wish God can bless you more and more

Me: Thank you

Her: Come on let's cook

Me: You can cook i will bond with my Niece, myNephew, and Koko

I took a packet of snacks and poured in a bowl, i went to join my Grandmother next to the stove with my Niece sitting on top of me. We started eating the snacks while talking nicely, at least with everything that's been going left in my life this is the best moment of my life..

.

. KING

I looked at the time and it was 17:30 i have been interrogating this woman for quite a while now and she was hard, she was very hard. The goal that we striving for is for her to tell me as much as she can until her lawyer gets here..

Personally i don't think she killed her husband

but from how she is presenting herself she gives me an impression that she might know who did it..

Her: Detective my kids are back from school now and i have to go home i am sure they sitting outside

Me: You will go home as soon as you give me the whole truth

Her: I did tell you the truth! And i am telling you that if i am guilty arrest me!

The door opened and some woman walked in followed by a lieutenant.

Lieutenant: Detective i am sorry but this is... Woman: Mrs Nkabinde's lawyer

She made her way to Mrs Nkabinde.. Her: Did they question you? Mrs Nkabinde nodded..

Woman: Can my client go home? You weren't

even supposed to question her in the first place Me: She can go home

They stood up and walked out..

.

. LIHLE

I was walking down that corridor it was a bit dark, cold and scary. The hands that were protruding from the bars looking ready to snatch me kind of freaked me out. The whistle that were going on and the noise freaked me out. I was holding a blanket and a pillow, i had already changed into their clothes..

The prison warden stopped at some cell and opened the doors, she held on to the door and waited for me to walk in. I swallowed my saliva and walked in with her following me.

Prison W: everyone listen!

It was a big cell with approximately 10 beds..Prison W: Here's a new friend

The other prisoners sat up straight looking at me. The prison warden left me there, she went out locking the door. I looked around while walking to spot a bed that was empty, i have heard stories about prisons and i was very much scared.

I spotted a bed at the corner that was empty i went and sat on it, everyone else went on to mind their own business. I looked around and this is going to be my home from now on until fate decide to get me out of here. I stood up and spread the blanket on the bed and then i laid down with tears falling. I kept on wiping them as they fell while most of my cell mates engaged in playing cards. I laid there for a couple of minutes just tears falling and thinking about how my life was over...

After a while i heard the key turning in, i sat up

straight hoping my name will be called and that i will be told to go home. The other mates went and stood next to their beds, i did the same too. The warden got in with two women, one of them looked a bit scary. She was a bit buffed and had a Manley body structure. She was wearing a grey vest, grey pants, and a grey shirt. She had a nice cut and her companion was an ordinary looking girl other than the fact that she looked very scared. They walked around looking at everyone until her eyes landed on me, she put her hands in her pockets and made her way to me. I started getting scared i won't lie..

She stood very close to me and looked at me, she leaned over and started sniffing me all over i closed my eyes to the sound of my heart beating . She sneered at me and then turned around she walked away and i finally could breath. She went straight to some girl and pulled her to the center by her neck, she made her kneel in front of her. She took out a pocket

knife and handed it to her companion then stepped back. The companion looked at the knife then looked at the girl..

Girl: Please don't kill me

The companion stood there all frozen you can clearly see that she wasn't used to what she was asked to do..

The companion dropped the knife all shaking, the Manley looking woman walked over and picked up the knife. She turned to her companion and stabbed her right in her tummy, she kept on stabbing her a few times with the prison warden standing there doing nothing. I covered my mouth with my hands, i have never seen someone killed right in front of me.

After stabbing her the Prison warden gave her a handkerchief she put it over the face of her victim. She looked at me and then winked at me with her hands covered in blood while still holding the pocket knife. She turned and

headed to the door with the warden following her, they locked and left us with her companion bleeding on the floor. We are going to sleep with a dead body.

.

To be continued

[09/29, 16:34] Ron: SEASON FINALE

¥63

LIHLE

Everyone else seemed to be getting through the night with a dead body laying on the floor with blood all around, i was sitting on the bed against the wall with my knees raised high up to my chest and just staring at the dead body.

Everytime when I close my eyes I could picture the whole scene of her getting stabbed, the knife being plunged in her abdomen area was traumatizing.

How can these girls sleep so peacefully

throughout the whole night with a dead body on the floor?

.

. KING

I couldn't sleep peacefully last night i was busy tossing and turning that i ended up waking up and going through the homicide case piecing together the puzzle trying to see where it leads me. I had just stepped out of the shower when i heard my phone ringing in the bedroom, i wrapped the towel around my lower body and went to answer it. It was my Sister..

Me: Sylvia Her: Stranger

Me: How are you?

Her: I am good and you?

Me: I am fine just preparing to go to work

Her: Glad i got you before you went to workMe: How is Momo?

Her: She's good.. She misses you

Me: I'll come and see her soon now i amworking on some homicide case

Her: Another one? Me: Yes another oneHer: How is Lihle?

I exhaled..

Her: What's happening?

Me: She got arrested yesterdayHer: What?

Me: She attacked her ex in public at herworkplace

Her: Did he provoke her?

Me: I don't know but she doesn't have anyscratch or even a black eye

Her: Maybe he provoked her verbally Me: But still..

Her: King you don't understand.. You were never abused

Me: Sylvia attacking someone in public is not smart

Her: When someone has made themselves superior over you for a long time they take away your sanity, even when you are away from that person but what they did to you follows you forever. The anger, the hate you have against that person grows everyday and when you see them again you are bound to attack because you explode!

Me: Fine ill go and see her later Her: Did she get bail?

Me: I am not sure i am not the one handling her case

Her: Okay you will tell me when you get back

Me: okay bye.. I love youHer: I love you too

She hung up and i found myself scrolling through my contact list until i bumped intoNombuso's number. I hope she will come around soon and allow me to see my Son..

.

. YAYA

I passed my Mother laying on our worn out couch she must've consumed a lot of alcohol yesterday for her to not have made it to the bedroom. I walked in on Thandeka dressing upher Daughter, it was warm in the kitchen..

Me: At what time do you wake up?

Her: Very early.. Since it's mostly cold in the mornings i have to make fire for Grandmother

Me: I can't believe the coal stove is still kicking

Her: It still does

I sat down very slowly and gently..Her: Are you alright?

Me: Yes i am fine She looked at me..Me: I..

Her: Yaya what's going on?I took a deep breath..

Me: My boyfriend he is abusiveShe put my niece down..

Her: Hamba uyovusa uNathi (go and wake yourbrother up)

My niece ran out of the room..

Her: What do you mean he is abusive?I didn't know what to say..

Her: Wait! does he beat you?

I nodded..

Her: What?? (shouting)

Me: Not so loud you are going to wake Koko
Her: Yaya you have to leave him

Me: It's not that easy Her: What if he kills you?

Me: Then it would be my destiny to die by his hand

Her: All along i thought you were living a very good life

I chuckled bitterly..

Me: Not everyone you see who has it all is living a good life

Her: I guess so

.

. LIHLE

Later on that morning we were taken out from our cells to go outside. We were forced to clean the whole yard, and mind you it's a big yard. I was relieved to be away from that cell though i was still shaken about what happened but i was glad to be away from that body. One of my cell mates came and swept next to me..

Her: Hey Me: Hey Her: Nelly Me: Lihle

We continued sweeping..

Her: I heard you sniffing last night were you crying?

Me: Just traumatized

I looked at her and she was the same girl who was supposed to be stabbed yesterday..

Me: How are you holding up knowing that you

almost got stabbed to death?She shrugged her shoulders..

The main door leading to the yard opened and several girls came out. They weren't wearing the same grey pants and a vest like us they were wearing different colours and it was three different groups each composed of like 10 members. One group was wearing a white vest and red pants, another one was wearing white vests and black pants, the last group was wearing white vests and blue pants. The ones who were wearing white vests and blue pants had the least members in their group..

Nelly: Great the gangs are here

They started smoking while standing there and staring at us as if like we were animals in the Zoo.

Me: If they are gangs then what are we?Nelly: Preys

The one who stabbed her companion last night in our cell was looking at me, today she was wearing a white vest, red pants, and red sneakers..

I took my eyes off her and continued sweeping..

.

To be continued

[09/29, 16:34] Ron: SEASON FINALE

¥64

KING

Me: I have already interrogated the wife i don't think she has done it but there's something off about her, she comes across as if like she knows who did it.

She had her hand balancing her cheek and she was staring at me as if like she wasn't even interested in this case, I exhaled in defeat and put the pen down. One thing i hate is handling

personal affairs while I am supposed to be working..

Me: Fikile i am not going to get Lihle out of prison

Her: Why not?

Me: She committed a crime she has to do the time just like everyone

Her: King that prison is now dangerous there's female gangs

Me: What's the worst that can happen to her? Her: They could kill her

Me: There's Prison Wardens they would never let that happen its not like the old days violence is forbidden if you attack or kill someone you adding more years to your sentence they know that!

Her: King we not just talking about typical female gangsters!

Me: Fikile it's a bunch of women the worst that could happen is cat fights pulling hair and all that

Her: Wow!

Me: Lihle needs to learn that with every action there's a consequence being in prison might be good for her there's no alcohol it's sort of rehabilitation

Her: My best friend's life is in danger and you are talking about rehabilitation?

Me: You exaggerating she will be fine
Her: And you are being ignorant

Me: You wanted in on this case, it's a big case and I can't have you acting like this.. Do you know how many lieutenants would jump at this opportunity?

She kept quiet..

Me: I'll go and check on our orders and next

time i am picking where we going to eat

Her: Agh don't be stingy we got paid a few days ago

I stood up and walked to the counter..Me: Ummm excuse me

The waitress came closer..

Me: I am sorry but me and my colleague have been waiting for our order it's been approximately 45min now

Her: Table number?Me: 5

Her: I'll check

She walked away, i turned around and just ran my eyes around. I couldn't believe what i was seeing outside through that transparent clean big window, i saw the lieutenant that arrested Lihle yesterday standing with Big Daddy. Big Daddy handed him an envelope and the

lieutenant looked around first before putting the envelope in his pocket...

.

. LIHLE

Hard labour is no joke the sun was shining now and i was sweating, we have been here almost all morning slaving around. I was dizzy, thirsty, and very hungry. I let go of the spade and leaned against the fence.

Nelly: What are you doing?

Me: I am tired we started off by sweeping now we here fixing the soil for only they know why iam tired

Nelly: I don't want you to get in trouble Me: We haven't eaten

Nelly: We will eat when we done with our chores let's go

I looked around and the gangs were just chilled and having a good time, some were playing soccer, some were playing cards, some were doing each other's hair, and it looked like they ate a while ago because they disappeared then came back..

Me: Lucky them

Nelly: It's not as nice as you think it is Me: Which gang dominates?

Nelly: The ones wearing red they call themselves niggarian bloods

Me: Nigg.. What?

Nelly: They are the female gang of a gang known as the bloods, but now that black & white is taking over they might not be at the top for that long

Me: Black & White what are they called?

Nelly: The skulls known to protect their own loyalty runs deep in that gang

Me: The blue ones?

Nelly: The cripz they are alliances with the skulls that's why they sitting together

Me: Who started these ridiculous gang thing? She shrugged her shoulders..

I saw the warden approaching us with the same girl who killed her companion yesterday in our cell..

Nelly: Ohh shit!! Me: What?

Nelly: Lorna she is the leader of the bloods

Lorna was holding a bottle of bonacqua pump, she is pretty cute if only she wasn't so intimidating and if only she didn't have so much tattoos..

I picked up the spade..

P. Warden: I've seen you standing don't start working now just because you see me

Lorna chuckled..

The warden looked at Nelly..Warden: Let's go

Nelly dropped her spade and i did too, the warden looked at me.

Her: Not youMe: but..

Her: Stay and it's an order

I watched her and Nelly walking away.. Lorna stretched her hand out to me..

Her: Water?

Her voice was a bit deep and scratchy at the same time..

I wanted to say no but i needed to quench my thirst, i looked at the bottle what if i will have to pay for this water later on? I don't wanna gamble with my life..

She opened the cap and started squeezing the

water out to the ground.. Her: I guess you not thirsty
I looked at that water just splashing around and my throat got more
and more dry..

.

. YAYA

We were at Pep when my phone rang..

Me: Continue getting clothes for the kids i have to take this

Thandeka: Okay

I walked out to answer the call it was Candice..Me: Hey Girl

Her: Don't hey girl meMe: What's wrong?

Her: Have you forgotten about your job? Big

Daddy has been patient with you Me: I haven't been going to school

Her: Yaya i know you having problems but I got you this job

because i wanted you to be independent! Big Daddy hates being disappointed! get your shit together

Me: Fine ill get you a girl this weekend Her: You better

She clicked her tongue and hung up, i put my phone in my bag and made my way back in..

Me: Seeing anything that you guys like? Thandeka: Just a couple of clothes

We continued looking around.

Her: You know if you hear something at Johannesburg just any job even if it's cleaning please call me

Me: You want a job?

Her: I am tired of the situation back at home, i

am tired of seeing my children growing up in poverty. What kind of a Mother am i? I can't even afford this R12.99 underwear for my Daughter I am useless!

I saw tears in her eyes..

Thandeka: I wish God can give me something..Anything

She wiped her tears...

Me: I might have something for you

.

To be continued

[09/29, 16:35] Ron: SEASON FINALE

¥65

LIHLE

Later on we were allowed to shower and then eat breakfast only because visitors were coming. I wasn't expecting anyone to come and visit me, i was surprised when the Warden told

me that there's someone here to see me. When I got to the visiting room I saw Fikile and Nomisa though I thought it was King who had come but nevertheless I was very happy that someone came to see me..

I attempted to hug them but the guard didn't want too so we sat down..

Fikile: I am so happy to see you

Me: Not as happy as I am to see you guys
Nomisa: How have you been babe?

Me: I am not okay I don't think I will survive here

Nomisa: Why hasn't King tried to get you out? What's the use of dating a cop if you can't benefit from that

Me: King doesn't have to do me favours because we are no longer dating

Nomisa: What? When did that happen?
Fikile: I cannot believe he didn't tell me

Me: It's fine you guys

I looked across and i saw Lorna sitting at the table with two guys.

One was white and the other one was black and very handsome..

Fikile: How is life inside? I didn't catch that..

Fikile: Lihle!

I looked at her.. Me: Huh?

Nomsa: What are you looking at? They both turned..

Nomsa: Hmmmm yummy Fikile: They handsome

After a while they noticed that we were starring at them, both Fikile and Nomsa turned..

Nomsa: Did they notice that we were looking at them?

Me: Of course they did.. Now Lorna is going to slit my throat

Fikile: Slit your throat?

Me: She practically runs the prison and she can kill whoever she wants

Fikile: Lihle if you are being abused you need to tell me so that I can report it

Me: What I want is to get out of here Nomsa: How many years did they give you?

Me: I haven't been sentenced yet and I don't know when I am going to court

Nomsa: bail? Me: nothing

Fikile: Wait...they just arrested you? Me: Yes

Fikile: Did they even Mirandize you? Me: What is that?

Fikile: "You have the right to remain silent etc" The Miranda warning?

Me: No

Fikile: I will discuss this with the captain it's not right

Nomsa: Whoever arrested you clearly has a lot to learn about the law

Fikile: When I get back to the station I will talk to the captain

Me: Thank you.. How is King? Fikile: He is fine

Me: That's good

Fikile: If it makes you feel better he misses you

Me: don't make up things just to make me happy

Fikile: Okay but when you get out of here you have to make things right with him

Me: I don't think he wants me anymore after

everything I've put him through

Nomsa: If he loves you then he will come around

Me: I hope so

.

. YAYA

After getting a few clothes for the kids we went to Steers to get burgers, I managed to tell Thandeka about the job that I want her to do and she's been awfully quiet..

Me: You don't have to do it constantly it can be a once off thingy for you to make money so you can be able to take care of your kids

Her: You basically asking me to sleep with guys for the whole weekend and get paid for it?

Me: I understand if you don't wanna do it but that's the only job I have for you I mean you

cannot be hired anywhere you don't have an ID and no education background

Her: So that means i should prostitute myself for money?

Me: Thandeka there's things i had to do too so that i can help out at home, the money i keep sending where do you think it comes from?

Her: No one asked you to do those things! You did them on your own you are responsible for your own actions

Me: So it's like that now?

Her: Can you please take us back home? Me: Fine!

I don't know why Thandeka is being difficult about this i mean she doesn't have anything so basically this was the only job that could pay her, put food on the table for her and her kids..

.

. KING

I was thinking about what i saw and quite frankly I want to approach the lieutenant but i can't, i do not wanna involve myself with Big Daddy again. I care a lot about Lihle and i don't want her getting hurt, falling victim to Big Daddy's evilness. I bought some takeaways and then went to see Nombuso at work and as always she wasn't happy to see me.

Her: What do you want? Me: Brought you food

Her: Thank you.. Now you can leave Me: You don't always have to be bitter

Her: I am bitter because i don't want you here King! I don't wanna see you

Me: I don't want a relationship with you I want a relationship with my Son!

Her: You are not going to see my Son so please leave!
I didn't say no more i left..

.

. NDILE

I woke up with a serious throbbing headacheLihle truly did a
number on me, Big Daddy walked in.

Him: Hey manMe: Hey

Him: How are you feeling?Me: Just a headache

Him: I am sure you going to be fine.. Good foryou the girl got
arrested

Me: What?

Him: Attempted murder

Me: No man I have to get her out

Him: Why? She committed a crime she has to pay

Me: Lihle's life is already messed up as it is, I am not going to have her behind bars period!

.

To be continued

[09/29, 16:36] Ron: SEASON FINALE

¥66

LIHLE

A FEW DAYS LATER

Being out of that hell hole was the best thing that has ever happened to me I wasn't going to survive any longer with everything that has been going down there. Fikile came to fetch me, I ran up to her and hugged her my friend came through me..

Me: thank you..thank you so much

Her: for fetching you?I broke the hug..

Me: you didn't speak to the captain as promised?

Her: I was going to run it by him just that I was consumed by some homicide case

Me: so if you didn't that means King pulled a few favours

Her: actually No

Me: Then what is going on?She held both my hands..

Her: Actually Sandile dropped the charges against you when he got discharged

I got my hands from her grip, that didn't sound right. Why would Sandile do this? He is not a generous guy, he wouldn't do me or anyone any favours

Her: It doesn't matter though! What matters is that you out!

Me: something is not right..Sandile cannot be this generous

Her: if you worried about your safety I am here I would never allow him to touch you let alone even get close to you

We made our way to the car..Me: thank you

We got inside. I know I should be celebrating but I can't until I know what that devil wants from me!

Her: how about we go to the pub and get something to eat?

Me: we can do that I guess

Her: I mean when was the last time you had a good meal?

Her: it's been a while no lie She started the car and drove..Me: how is King?

Her: he is holding up very well Me: that's good to hear

Her: you wanna know if he misses you right? Me: not really

She chuckled.. Her: yeah right!

Me: well does he miss me?

Her: he tries to act tough but I could see that he misses you

Me: I hope that I can still fix things with him Her: you will.. King is a great guy

.

. YAYA

Candice took a good look at my Sister who arrived 2 days ago..

Candice: I don't know Yaya

Me: come on

Candice: the client was very specific Me: we can pimp her up

Candice: in one day? Me: A wig can work

Candice: what if it falls off while they still doing it?

Me: Candice trust me I can pimp her up She sighed while folding her arms..

Candice: if you say so then

She walked over to the table and got a file..

Candice: everything that she has to know about the client is here especially what he likes and what he doesn't like

Thandeka: I must learn all of that in one day? Candice raised one of her eyebrows..

Candice: Do you have a problem with that?

Thandeka shook her head no..

Candice: I have to run somewhere ill give you a call later

Me: okay babe

She kissed me on my cheek..

She took her bag and her iPhone then looked at Thandeka one last time while shaking her head. Thandeka watched her until she disappeared..

Me: Okay let's do this

Her: I don't think your friend likes me that much
Me: She will come around

I went through the file..

Me: He is not impossible to please
Her: what does he like?

Me: well he is an ordinary guy likes the typical boring sex likes to be in charge and only wants missionary, meaning he will be doing most of the work.

Her: That's better

I closed the file and looked at her..Me: Are you okay?

She nodded repeatedly..

Me: If you don't wanna do this I understand

Her: I want to do it..I mean I have to do it for mykids

Me: For your kids

The door opened and Sandile walked in.Him: Ladies

We greeted him back..

He came and kissed me on my cheek..Him: what are you guys up to?

Me: just teaching my Sister what to do and whatnot to do tomorrow

Him: I see

His phone beeped..He took it out.

Him: I have to go Me: where too?

Him: have something to attend too

He kissed me again and then walked away..

Me: You should go and bath so that we can go and shop for a dress
She stood up and walked away. I applaud Thandeka for doing this,
it's a very courageous thing to do when you have kids, but then again
I cannot keep on being the only one who must sacrifice her life and
dignity just to put food on the table. She is a woman and she has a
Vagina like me. My Mother was happy to look after the kids when
she heard that I found Thandeka a job because she will be
benefiting a lot financially..

.

. KING

Kruger punched him one last time and the guy seemed to not be taking this seriously, to solve this homicide case I need answers!

Kruger: I think he is going to pass out!

I looked at him tied up on that chair, his white vest had blood and his face was covered in blood too. He spat out a few times..

I wiped the sweat from my forehead as Kruger went to wash his hands..

Me: Lieutenant Zikalala!..Zikalala!! He slowly looked at me..

Me: I saw you with Big Daddy that day he gave you some money in an envelope

He didn't say Anything..

Kruger: You should go back to work before they suspect something I will deal with him

Me: Just make sure he doesn't die before he tells us what we need to know

He nodded, I pat him on his shoulder. Me: Good work as always I didn't think that I was going to go back in my old ways of how I solve cases, but I need to solve this homicide case and I know that Zikalala knows something..

.

. NDILE

Big Daddy poured us some whiskey.

Him: Candice tells me that we have a girl for our client tomorrow

He sipped from his glass.. Me: Yes Yaya's Sister

Him: Candice doesn't have much faith in her. Says she's classless

Me: Yaya has faith in her.. I am sure she will do good

Him: I hope so

I also took a sip of the Whiskey..

Him: I haven't been able to get hold of Zikalala for the past two days

Me: That's strange

Him: My men don't just disappear into thin air after getting their job done! I am worried

I raised the glass up and looked at it.. Him: I think King might have gotten to him

Me: King found out that Zikalala killed Nakbinde?

Him: I hope not I cannot keep on having these run ins with King, but if he knows what's good for him he will back off!

I took out my phone and sent Lihle a text message:

“Congratulations on making it out, we should meet up and talk.. You owe me”

Big D: I must appoint one of the guys to tail

King

Me: That might work I cannot be an accomplice to another homicide
ill go down this time around

Him: We will think of something

.

[09/29, 16:37] Ron: SEASON FINALE

¥67

LIHLE

Fikile drove me to the Complex so i can fetch my bag at work
since it had my key and my phone, i left it there when i got
arrested. I was abit embarrassed to go to work and face everyone
after what happened but then i don't need them to understand, i
don't need anyone to understand why i did what i did..

Fikile kept herself busy by looking at a few clothes and i went to
Baso she was standing ather counter..

Me: Hey

She looked at me..Her: Hey Lihle

Me: Just came to collect my bag.. It's at theback

Baso: ohw I'll get if for you

She went at the back and took her own timewhen she came back,
she came back with Nombuso..

I should've known, they both came to me..Nombuso: Lihle

Me: Nombuso Her: How are you?

Me: Fine thanks and you?Her: I am well

Baso handed me my bag..Me: Thank you

Nombuso: You have to come when you have time so we can discuss your future in the tfg company

Me: I will come

Her: Do you know when?

Me: Not really but I'll make time Her: Thank you

She walked away to the back office. I looked at Baso..

Me: Thank you for the bag Her: You welcome

I went to Fikile and we walked out, i unzipped my bag and took out my phone. It was on 15% and i had a couple of missed calls from my Aunt and Ntokozo, then i had one disturbing message from Sandile. The message stated clearly that "I owe him"..

Fikile: Are you okay?

Me: Yes i am fine just catching up on what'shappening on Facebook

Her: Okay

.

. THANDEKA

I was done bathing and I was waiting for Yaya so that we can go and get the dress, she was inthe bedroom busy on her phone and i decided to keep myself busy by washing dishes when the door opened and Sandile came in..

I was wearing a tight dress that was very shortand Sandals I didn't have much clothes. I usually opt for jeans because of my big ass but unfortunately all my jeans are no longer in goodcondition so I am forced to wear dresses..

Sandile: where is Yaya?

Me: She's in the bedroom i think she is on herphone

He nodded and i went back to what i was doing..Him: You look great

Me: Thank you

I found that a bit inappropriate..

He was standing behind me leaning against thefridge..

Him: Is your boyfriend fine with you being here?Me: I don't have a boyfriend

Him: Get out of here!

I stopped washing dishes and I turned..Me: Serious i am not dating

Him: Why?

Me: I just was never blessed in that department

Him: Pity.. I am sure any guy would be lucky tohave you

Me: Well maybe one day

He looked at me from head-to-toe

Him: Maybe one day indeed

Yaya said this guy is abusive and everything but to me he comes across as a good person, he hasn't given me any reason to think of him otherwise..

Yaya walked in..

Yaya: Thandeka sorry i took long it..

Me: It's fine i was washing dishes to keep myself busy

She looked at Sandile..

Her: Can you please borrow us your car we will be right back

He took out his car keys and handed them to her..

Yaya: Thank you She looked at me.. Yaya: let's go

I wiped my hands and i followed her as she led

the way..

.

. LIHLE

Fikile dropped me off at the gate and said she will call me i hugged her and went out of the carthen i made my way in. I was still disturbed by Sandile's text message will i ever be free from him? I unlocked and walked in, the house was quiet and it was clean. I thought that i would find it dirty and all that since King is at work most of the time. I went to the bedroom and threw my bag on the bed, i read the text again. I cannot live like this, i cannot live in fear of Sandile always have to look over my shoulder it's not a good way to live. I walked over to the kitchen and got me something to drink then i went and watched TV in the lounge, i didn't find anything that was entertaining other than channel 171, they were playing some crime

documentary called "The Perfect murder" it seemed a bit interesting i laid back and watched after it they was going to play "Swampmurders"

.

. NDILE

I was taking a bit of interest in Yaya's Sister. She is beautiful and beyond that she has an Assthat i would really like to tap, if i knew her instead of Yaya i probably would have long hitched her. I took my phone from the table andcalled Big Daddy..

Him: Is everything okay?

Me: Everything is fine i just need a favour

Him: You ask for a lot of favours just because iam using your club for my business doesn't mean i should always do you favours, i did youa favour now one of my guys is missing i am

done doing you favours

Me: It's not a big favour relaxHim: What is it?

Me: I thought that maybe you could invite my girlfriend over for dinner at your place tonightdiscuss matters of tomorrow and all that

Him: Why?

Me: I need to do something and i don't want herknowing

Him: shouldn't she be training her Sister fortomorrow something like that?

Me: Just for a few hours pleaseHim: Fine ill see what I can do Me: Thank you

.

. LIHLE

These crime documentaries were really worth watching, these people plan perfect murders if only the cops weren't so dedicated they would actually get away with these murders. By now i had a pen and pad taking down notes:

- Duct tape
- ligature rope
- shovel
- taser
- Saw
- knife

Yes i was taking down notes because i want to pull a perfect murder i am planning on taking Sandile's life..

.

To be continued1

[09/29, 16:38] Ron: SEASON FINALE

¥68

YAYA

Thandeka: I cannot believe we shopped up until this late
She said that as she also got in the car..

Her: And you didn't even look at the prices you just took

Me: That's what happens when you have money

Her: That's the life just getting everything you want without looking
at the price

Me: Are you ready to go home now? Her: Yes i am

My phone started ringing it was Candice.. Me: I have to take this it's
Candice

Her: Let me also call Mom and see if she's coping with the kids

Me: Okay

She got out of the car and went to make that

call outside while I answered Candice's call..Me: Hey

Her: Yaya did i catch you at the bad time?

Me: Not exactly i was doing shopping with mysister

Her: Look i want you to come over Big Daddywants to talk to you

Me: About?

Her: not really sure

Me: I should come over now?

Her: Yes it's not going to take that longI exhaled..

Me: My Sister and I have a lot to do

Her: You know when Big Daddy says jump youask how high

Me: Fine i am on my way

Her: Don't bring your sister along i don't like her

she doesn't have style. She's too dull and classless

Me: I understand

I hung up and waited for Thandeka to come back, she got in after a few minutes..

Me: How are they?

Her: You know Mom she's busy shouting she wants her Money

Me: She must relax you will give her I started the car..

Me: I will have to drop you off at home i am going somewhere

Me: Thought we were going to discuss a few things with regards to tomorrow

Me: I know but it's an emergency i won't take that long though

Her: Okay

.

. LIHLE

"Must be love on the brain That's got me feeling this way,
It beats me black and blue but it fucks me so good, And I can't get
enough.. Must be love on the brain, And it keeps cursing my name,
No matter what I do I'm no good without you.."

I was standing at the kitchen drinking coffee and lost in my
thoughts while playing a few of my favourite songs with my
phone. Killing someone is a very big thing, never in a million
years did i ever think that i would be standing here today planning
to murder my ex. Sandile will never stop tormenting me, no matter
where i go or where i turn he will always be there haunting me like
a ghost. What sets me off at the edge is the fact that he was
involved in my Mother's death and got away with it, he has his

Mom his life is carrying on while mine is messed up. My life is a dark tunnel that leads tonowhere only if my Mother was here then I wouldn't be suffering like this. I jumped a little when the door opened and King walked in, He was stunned to see me standing there. He looked at me while taking his shirt off and his white vest had small stains of blood. For a moment we didn't know what to say to each other, we just stood there starring at each otherwith Rihanna telling the distance between us.

"Babe, I'm fist-fighting with fireJust to get close to you
Can we burn something, babe?"

And I'll run for miles just to get a taste.. Must belove on the brain"
I was overwhelmed with different emotions seeing him just made me realize that I was a fool in all i did, my relationship with him meantmore than the alcohol, my love for him stands

against any pain and anger that i have for Sandile. In my mist of trying to deal with what I was going through chased away the only person that might have truly loved me. I didn't even realize that I was crying until I felt his strong arms around me, i needed the hug i needed to be in his presence. I needed to be reminded that no matter how bad other people can be but he is the good that i was blessed with, it took me being locked up to realize how much he means to me.

"Baby, you got me like ahhhh.. Ahhh Don't you stop loving me, loving me Don't quit loving me, loving me Just start loving me"

.

. THANDEKA

When i got home the first thing i did was to take

a bath. I was fascinated by their bathtub and shower i mean i am from a household where we use a small basin to bath in, and for me to have so much room in the bathtub just makes me want to bath every minute. I was in the guest room applying lotion when i heard someone knocking at the door..

Me: I am coming

I grabbed the robe that Yaya bought me and wrapped it around my naked body then went to open the door, it was Sandile..

Him: Sorry to disturb you just wanted to tell you that dinner is ready

Me: Oh why you shouldn't have i would've cooked
Him: I am sure you tired from all that shopping

I smiled and looked down. Sandile is very handsome his eyes make my knees weak when he makes eye contact with me..

I stepped out and closed the door...

I followed him to the lounge he had already dished up for us..

Him: I did macaroni & cheese it's a simple dish but very delicious

Me: Thank you

We both sat on the same couch and he got me the glass of wine from the table..

Him: Here.. it's wine

I took the glass and sipped the wine, it was bitter he laughed as I struggled to swallow it..

Him: It's dry red tastes bitter but it's healthy reduces chances of you getting a Cardiac arrest

Me: Sounds fancy Him: It's just wine

I leaned over and put the glass on the table.. Him: How are your kids at home?

Me: They are fine

Him: That's good to hear at least now you can provide for them
I nodded..

Him: I am going to get straight to the point He put his glass on the
table too..

Him: I like you a lot

That was highly inappropriate..

Him: I know you think I am crazy and everything but I am not
looking to marry you or a serious relationship just a bit of fun..

He ran his hand on my thigh..

Him: I can take care of you think about it you can move here with
your kids i can rent a flat for you and i can find you a job make you
a manager in my restaurant only if you willing to be mine alone
I cleared my throat..

Me: I don't wanna step on my sister's toes

Him: Yaya is not a Saint she's cheating on me and it was never that serious between us she's after my money

I didn't know what to say..

Him: Come on don't you wanna live a nice life? Live like a queen?

I thought about the situation back at home, the struggles, my Mother always insulting me and mistreating my kids. I thought about the life Sandile is promising me and maybe.. Just maybe it could work, i don't know i am very confused..

I was interrupted from my thoughts when he smashed his lips onto mine, at first i froze not knowing how to react to the situation but as he went on to untie my robe then massaging my breasts i slowly got into the mood. He went on to leave wet kisses on my neck, on my breasts, down to my tummy. He asked me to stand up and then he laid back on the couch, he told me

to literally sit on his face. I wasn't used to what he was expecting me to do..

Him: Come on i wanna eat your pussy i promise you, you will enjoy I did as he told me, he instructed me not to entirely sit on him i balanced with the arm rest of the couch as i positioned myself in squatting position and then he lifted his head up a little as his mouth made it to my pussy. He kissed my clit a few times and then his tongue played around while he was tightly grabbing my ass and spanking it in between, i moaned as pleasure kicked in paralyzing my whole body it's been a while since I had a guy do this to me. I was really enjoying what he was doing at that moment the whole world didn't exist it was just me and him..

Him: Do you like that?

I slowly nodded as i swayed left and right just taking the pleasure in, i was going out of mind. I

seriously didn't know what to do with myself.

.

To be continued

[09/29, 16:39] Ron: SEASON FINALE

¥69

LIHLE

I watched closely as King put his gun in the safe "4-5-3-2" that is the combination to the safe even though he twisted it quickly but i was able to well memorize the code. He picked up that painting and placed it on the wall hiding off the safe, he turned and smiled at me..

Me: So are you going to work tomorrow?

I said that while putting my arms around his neck..

Him: I am not working this weekend but i do have a few errands to run

He put his hands around my waist.

Me: Like?

Him: Like fetching Momo she wanted to come and visit

Me: That's good

Him: Why.. did you have something in mind? Me: No.. I just wanted to visit my Mom's grave He kissed me on my forehead..

Him: I can call Momo to take taxis so that I can accompany you

Me: Aren't you so sweet? But no thanks it's something I want to do on my own

Him: If you say so then I kissed him..

Me: I am sorry about everything.. You know when I was locked up I had a lot to think about and...

He put his index finger on my lips.

Him: Those are things of the past let's move on
Me: let's move on indeed

Him: Speaking of moving on how about we move to the shower?

Me: Nice try but i already had a warm bubblebath

Him: Then I will be right back because we have a lot of catching up to do

He spanked my Ass before walking away..

Things between me and King are starting to fall into place and i really don't want anything standing in the way, i really need to be rid of Sandile. When i heard the shower water running i got my phone and called him, didn't take him that long to pick up..

Him: either my eyes are deceiving me or my ancestors favoured me today.. Langelihle Cele

I felt my heart starting to betray me fear crept in, my throat raised no words and my

hands got a bit sweaty..Him: Are you still there?

Me: I wanna meet you.. TomorrowHim: Excuse me?

Me: I wanna meet you tomorrow and i want usto meet in a public place

Him: meeting for what?Me: You said i owe you

He kept quiet for a few seconds..Him: Tomorrow night then

Me: At night?

Him: My girls are going out tomorrow night so iwill be bored

Me: Fine tomorrow night at the usualrestaurant

Him: Should i pick you up?Me: Don't be insane

He laughed..Him: 20:00?

Me: Yes

Him: How do I know it's not a set up?

Me: I would set you up because? Don't you getaway with everything?

Him: point taken I'll see you tomorrow night

I hung up and looked at my phone busy asking myself if I really set up a date with the devil..

The shower water was still running so I quickly went to the safe to get his gun.. "4-5-3-2"

I got it and closed the safe, then i put the painting back. I walked around in circles trying to figure out where I should put it, it was a bit heavy and i had no idea how to use it. I put it under the mattress on my side and took a few deep breaths, i am doing this for everyone that Sandile has ever hurt..

.
. THANDEKA

After the session I had with Sandile i took a bath again. I was a bit sore but that could be the fact that i haven't had any in a very long time, i am glad we used Protection the last thing i want is another baby to add more stress on myself and at home. I really enjoyed myself and I am sure he did too, the way that he was so obsessed with grabbing my Ass, spanking it, kissing it and letting me bounce it on his D****ck it was heaven for him, i could see from his facial expression. I was in the guest room applying a bit of lotion with a huge smile on my face, i truly enjoyed myself with Sandile i don't understand why Yaya would ruin something so special. I mean Sandile is obviously that type of guy that would take care of you if you take care of him and respect him.

Ontop of that he is very handsome and has abody to die for, his lips, his eyes he is just soperfect and its a bonus that he is rich..

The door of the guest room opened i was still naked, he made his way in wearing nothing buthis boxers.

He closed the door and leaned against itlooking at me all smiling.

Him: Come here

I slowly went up to him and he ran his hands onmy naked body, he pulled me close to him and icould feel that he was hard. He extended his hands on my butt and just started shaking it and that was turning him on more, he was rock hard as my hand made its way into his boxers.

He brought his face closer to mine and we started french kissing, he was sweeping me offmy feet.

Me: What about Yaya?

Him: Don't worry about Yaya

He picked me up and then went to sit on the bed with me on top of him.

We continued kissing as i helped him to lower his boxers exposing his very stiff manhood..

Me: Condom?

Him: You will use Yaya's morning after pill when we done now i wanna hit it raw

He laid back and massaged my breasts..

Him: You are very special to me and you are very beautiful

I blushed a little..

Him: from hereon there's nothing that i won't do for you

Me: Promise?

Him: As long as you stay faithful to me Me: I will

He lowered his hands to my waist and lifted me up a bit, he helped me to slide down on him it was uncomfortable. I don't know if I was too tight or he was too big but it went deeper Making it very uncomfortable. I gasped as it was further in...

Me: It's.. It's.. It's very d.. Deep

.

. YAYA

I heard something making noise I quickly moved away from the bushes to the road. It was very dark and I wasn't hearing or seeing any car coming, I should've known better than to take this road back home at night but then again it's the only short cut I know and now I am stuck here with flat tyres. It's weird how everything happened, while I was driving a car passed by next to mine the driver was speeding and then along the way I encountered spikes that

shot through the tyres this is a set up and Sandile is going to kill me, he won't understand at all. I checked my phone again and there was no service, so basically I am doomed..

.

To be continued

[09/29, 16:40] Ron: SEASON FINALE

¥70

LIHLE

That Saturday morning i prepared a scrumptious breakfast for King before he left to go and fetch Momo, on my side i didn't eat i was too nervous about the events that are going to take place tonight. I could ask King for a few pointers but that will make him suspicious, i mean he can see right through me. He got up and went to put his dish in the sink while looking at me, i was standing there just thinking.

Him: You can use my car to go to the cemetery I'll use the police car to go and fetch Momo

Me: Are you sure? I mean I can always use a taxi?

Him: I think using my car will be more convenient

Me: Thanks

He walked up to me after wiping his hands with the dish cloth, he squeezed my cheek..

Him: Are you okay? I nodded..

Me: I am fine

Him: I can always cancel with Momo and we can spend the weekend together

Me: No she will be very disappointed if you do that

Him: I don't like leaving you in this state Me: I am fine King don't worry

He looked at the time..Him: let me go then He kissed me..

Him: See you later or tomorrow morning and Ilove you

Me: I love you too

Him: I'll call Fikile so she can come and checkup on you if i don't come back today

Me: I am not a baby

Him: with your psychopath ex i am not takingany chances!

He took his phone and wallet then walked out. Iwent to the bathroom to go and take a shower before starting my day..

.

. YAYA

I only was able to get network coverage this morning i had spent the night in the car i couldn't even sleep peacefully i would close myeyes then open them after a few minutes, just to check if i was still safe and everything. I called Candice to come and fetch me plus i amin this situation because of her, she shouldn't have invited me to her place because Big Daddydidn't even show up so we had dinner and watched a few movies. She parked her car behind Sandile's car and got out then she approached me..

Her: Why didn't you call me last night?Me: I had no network coverage

Her: Ohh my word babe are you okay?Me: I survived
She hugged me..

Her: Why did you use this road though?

Me: Because i thought i was gonna get home

quicker

Her: I am truly sorry

She looked at Sandile's car..Her: And?

Me: Spikes Her: Spikes?I sighed..

Me: Just get me home please i still have to explain to Sandile what happened

Her: Okay get in the car

I went to take my things from the car and then locked it, i went and got inside Candice's car..

.

. THANDEKA

I was pacing up and down at the kitchen i was very worried about Yaya i didn't hear her coming

in last night and she's not taking my calls.Sandile walked in..

Him: Good morningMe: Morning

He got a cup and poured water..Him: Here drink the pill

Me: thank you

I took it and drank..

Me: Yaya didn't come home last night right?Him: That's correct

Me: Shouldn't we be worried?

Him: I am sure she spent a night at her friend'splace

Me: She should've called thoughHe exhaled in annoyance..

Him: Yaya is a big girl plus she might have usedthis as another
excuse to cheat on me

Yaya and Sandile's relationship seems complicated..

Him: Go bath so we can go out to eat breakfast plus i need to give you some money to send home

Me: Thank you

Him: You take care of me and I take care of you..Remember that

Me: ummm about tonight

Him: It will be the first and the last time you do something like that are we clear?

I nodded..

He gave me a faint smile.. Him: Come I'll run you a bath

He held my hand and then we walked to the bathroom..

.

.

LIHLE

I parked the car next to some church around where we live i have been sitting here for approximately 15 minutes debating with myself whether I should go in or not. I looked at myself in the rear view mirror and took a few deep breaths then i got out of the car and walked to the church. I thought the door would be locked but it wasn't, i walked in and went to sit at the front. It was a beautiful church the windows were tinted and had pictures of Jesus, some had pictures of Jesus and his disciples. I don't know why i was here but i need the Lord to forgive me for what i am about to do, i cannot go to jail for murder. Murdering an evil person should not be a sin because i would've done a lot of people a favour. I was holding my bag that had King's gun that feels a bit disrespectful though being in the house of the Lord with a gun... I looked up at the ceiling with tears falling, i

need protection Lord i need you to help me accomplish this. I closed my eyes as the tears created a stream of river..

Me: It's not disrespect but it's revenge!

.

. KING

Before i could go and fetch Momo i passed by at the secret location where Zikalala was being held hostage. I was disappointed to find him dead, that means the case has gone cold he was the only lead i had. Me: Did he tell you Anything?

Kruger: No human being is immune to pain before his last breath he told me everything

I folded my arms.. Me: Yeah?

Him: He was paid by Big Daddy to kill NkabindeBig Daddy said he is doing it as a favour for a friend "Sandile"

Me: I fucken knew it!

He handed me Zikalala's phone..

Him: Calls were made between him and this Sandile guy two days before Nkabinde got killedand also after his death.. said there's also text messages

Me: This is good

Him: You wanna go after Big Daddy again?

Me: I am not going after him i am going after this psychopath Sandile i just need to find a wayto use this evidence since we attained it

illegally

Him: You will think of somethingMe: I sure will

Him: Let me call the guys so we can get rid of

the body

Me: Good work as always man
Him: I always got your back

.

To be continued

[09/29, 16:41] Ron: SEASON FINALE

¥71

YAYA

The house was quiet no sign of Thandeka and no sign of Sandile. It was weird Thandeka doesn't know this place that well to be wondering off alone, Sandile might be with Big Daddy. I took out my phone and called them but they didn't pick up so i made myself something to eat and went to eat in the lounge while watching tv.

After eating i wanna take a long

bath and then sleep i didn't get much sleep lastnight..

My phone vibrated on the table as i leaned forward to get it the spoon from my bowl fell, i reached down to locate it with my hand but myhand stumbled upon something slimy. I broughtmy hand up and it was a used condom it wasn'teven a mistake the person put it there on purpose so that i can find it. I didn't wanna thinkthe obvious my sister cannot be sleeping with Sandile i deny, one will say but why am i angry because of how Sandile is but this is the biggest Betrayal of them all after everything i have done for Thandeka she goes and repays me by doing this? It's not right at all. I was pacing up and down very angry and hurt at the same time, i didn't know how react to this situation but one thing i know is that i cannot have Sandile keep on treating me like this!

There's a limit to what a human being can takeand this is my limit!

. LIHLE

After my visit at the church i drove to straight to my Mother's grave i wanted to talk to her about what i intend on doing tonight but when I got there i just stared down at her resting place and I couldn't stop the tears, it hurt it hurt really bad. This pain is one pain i will never get through, it will never get better and how she died is what makes the pain worse. I knelt down next to her grave i blame myself for her death, if only i listened to her about Sandile, if only i didn't go to that dinner, if only.. If only.. If only...

Me: I am sorry Mama I wiped my tears..

Me: But i promise it all ends tonight

I ran my hand on that red soil that deep within was hiding her coffin.

Me: How am I going to get through this? How am I going to live without you? I thought the pain would be better now but it's worse it gets worse everyday

.

. THANDEKA

With the money that Sandile gave me i was able to send my Mother R2500 via money market, since i didn't have an ID Sandile used his. She wasn't very much pleased with the amount of money, Sandile was in the car while i was on the phone with Mom..

Ma: Imali encane so? (such a small amount of money)

Me: It's the only money i have now

Ma: Ungazodlala wena (don't play like that) I kept quiet..

Ma: This money won't cover much labantwanabakho bayadla and not forgetting that i no longer have a life i have to look after them all the time

Me: I will send you some money again in acouple of days

Ma: Uze uhlulwa uYaya (Yaya beats you)

Here we go the comparison starts now of howYaya is better than me.

Ma: I don't know where i went wrong with you Thandeka you should've stayed with your Fatherand that step Mother of yours who was mistreating because honestly you are nothing but a burden to me! You and your little Devils!

Me: There's no need to be bitter i sent you themoney

Ma: 2500 you call it money? Because this money i have to split it and use some on your children, buy groceries and then what do i end

up with? Nothing! Totally nothing!

Me: I don't know what you want me to say because I am trying

Ma: try harder! If you don't send money in 2 weeks time come back and take your little devils!

She clicked her tongue and hung up i didn't even get time to talk to my children. I wiped my tears and went back to the car..

Ndile: Are you okay?

He stretched his hand to wipe my tears that couldn't stop falling..

I didn't say anything for a while just starring at my phone..

Him: Talk to me

Me: were you serious about taking care of me and my kids?

Him: Yes i was

I nodded.. Me: thank you

Him: is everything okay?

Me: Everything is fine.. Let's go home

.

. LIHLE

On my way home i tried calling Fikile but she wasn't picking up, I want her to drive me to the restaurant tonight so i can meet Sandile. As i was driving home it dawned on me that I cannot use King's gun, if i use King's gun they will rule what is supposed to be a self defense situation to "premeditated murder" the investigation will prove that i had intentions of killing Sandile, i don't know what i am going to do but all i know is that i cannot cancel he will definitely think it was a setup. Fikile only called when I was unlocking the door, i answered her call as i

made my way in..Me: Fikile hey

Her: I got your missed calls what's up?

Me: I know this is going to sound crazy but..Her: but what?

Me: I need you to drive me somewhere tonightat 20:00

Her: Where?

Me: Just somewhere

Her: Does the place have a name?Me: Restaurant to meet someone

Her: I am not understanding your storyMe: Just trust me please

Her: uhmm okayMe: Thank you

After the call I sent King a message:

"I love you so much always remember that"

I then walked to the bedroom to put his gun back into the safe..

.

. YAYA

There i was turning the house upside down checking for more evidence that indeed my sister is sleeping with my boyfriend and in the guest room that she is meant to be occupying for the duration of her stay here i found Sandile's boxers and her gown on the floor.

First it was the condom now this, what more evidence do I need??

I sat on that bed just thinking until I heard them making their way in all talking and laughing, i waited for them to pass by the passage so they can spot me sitting on the bed in the guest room..

Thandeka was the first to pass, she stopped when she saw me and Sandile showed up behind her just about to grab her Ass when Thandeka stopped her..

They both stood there not knowing what to say, it was sickening to even think about this whole mess..

I stood up and approached them, I could see the shame in Thandeka's eyes....

I threw the condom at them together with the gown and boxers, I looked at Thandeka..

Me: Don't be too comfortable it's only going to be a matter of time before he does the same to you

I looked at Sandile..

Me: I am done with you..

I walked away and he grabbed my arm I don't know where I got the courage to slap him but I did..

Me: don't you ever touch me again!

.

To be continued

[09/29, 16:41] Ron: SEASON FINALE

¥72

KING

I was in my bedroom looking at Sandra's picture and just thinking about the day she tragically passed on, we had plans we were meant to get married in a few months time. Losing someone that you once gave your heart too hurts more than anything that i can imagine, i put her photo down when i saw my Sister standing at the door...

Sylvia: She had a very beautiful smile Me: She did

Sylvia: Do you miss her? Me: Everyday

Sylvia: It's not your fault she's gone
Me: It is Sis.. We both know it is She walked in..

Sylvia: You are not a bad person King

Me: I might be.. I was obsessed with my job and Sandra was killed because of me, Nombuso her life is messed up she will always have nightmares because of what happened to her and..

I turned and looked at her..

Me: I killed your husband.. Momo doesn't have a Father because of me

Sylvia: We both know that if you didn't act fast at that moment he was going to kill me, it was either me or him!

I went and sat down on the bed joined by her.. She held my hand..

Her: Look let the past be the past, forgive

yourself and move on

Me: It's difficult it's very difficult

I took out my phone and I had a message from Lihle..

Me: This is strange Her: What?

I showed her the message..

Her: Ncooooooo this is so sweet

Me: When someone sends you such a message it means they not coming back

Her: You and your Detective instincts

Me: Where is Momo it's already late we have to drive back

Her: Thought you guys were leaving tomorrow morning

Me: Cannot leave Lihle on her own Her: She is not a baby

Me: Trust me she is

.

. YAYA

Candice kept on clicking her tongue as she was driving, she just picked me up at a nearby garage with my bags. I was staring out of the window i don't know what i am going to do from hereon but what I know is that i cannot keep on being treated like this by Sandile, it's not right i am a human being too...

Candice: Daughter of a b***I didn't say anything..

Her: Sorry i understand you guys have the same Mother but.. Who the hell does she think she is? You should've let me drive to your place just to kick her Ass

Me: There's no use.. Sandile is infatuated with her he didn't even try to stop me

Her: Take this the wrong way it's fine but I am glad you left him
you deserve better way better

Me: I will meet the client later on instead of Thandeka

Her: You don't have too sweetly Me: cannot disappoint Big Daddy

Her: I will talk to him

Me: It's fine plus i need the money now that Sandile and i are no
longer together

She held my hand..

Her: We will get through this

.

. LIHLE18:00

I looked at myself in the mirror one more time I was wearing a
black dress, black stockings, and

black heels. Since I no longer have a plan i don'tknow how this meeting is going to turn out but Idecided to wear black because it could be my last day on earth. Why did I agree to this? Whatmade me think that i could pull this through?

But it's in a public place, he cannot hurt me in apublic place. He cannot be that crazy.. My phone rang making me jump a little, i went andgot it. It was King..

Me: King

Him: Whatever you planning to do don't do it! Ilove you Lihle

Me: What are you talking about?

Him: The message you sent me.. Are you drunk?Are you trying to kill yourself?

Me: No i am not drunkHim: Then wh.....

I couldn't hear the rest of the sentence..Me: King?? King??..

. KING

Me: Lihle?? Lihle??

I checked my phone the call was still on but I couldn't hear her..

Me: Shit!!

Momo: Are you okay Uncle King? Me: I am fine pumpkin

I continued driving..

Me: Here.. Call Aunty Lihle for me Her: Okay

I passed her my phone..(After 1min)

Her: It doesn't go through tried a few times

Me: go through my contact list and you will see the name "Kruger"
call him

Her: There's no service Uncle King.. Here's your phone
I stretched my hand to her i felt her putting it on my hand but as i
tried to bring my hand back it fell...
I leaned over and tried to locate it when I heard Momo scream
"Uncle King watch out"

.

. THANDEKA

I should have never come to Johannesburg i should've stayed at
home and just lived my life maybe something would've come up
than for me to come here and ruin the only relationship that made
sense to me and that is my relationship with my Sister. I tried
calling her but she wasn't taking my calls, I was hurt to know that i
hurt her. I got out of bed i had a headache

from crying a lot, i made my way to the main bedroom wanted to ask Sandile if he had somepain killers. He was standing at the dressing table, was dressed up in a black suit and he puta gun around his waist i stood at the door and looked at him for a couple of seconds before knocking. Is he going to shoot someone? Who is Sandile like on a serious note now, Is he dangerous as how Yaya portrayed him? Is he involved in some illegal things?

I knocked..

He turned around and looked at me.

Me: I was.. I was asking if you have some painkillers?

Him: What's wrong? Are you sick?Me: Just a headache

Him: Check inside the drawersMe: Okay

Him: Are you going to be alright? I am going out

for a while

Me: Where too?

Him: Going to meet up with someone Me: I should be fine

He came and kissed me on my forehead..

Him: don't wait up for me i might come back late

.

To be continued

[09/29, 16:42] Ron: SEASON FINALE

¥73

KING

I totally lost control of the car and before I knew it we were off the road and we came in contact with a tree, luckily i had my seatbelt on and Momo was at the back seat, so she was saved by my seat. It blocked her from the force that was going to eject her through the windscreen.

It was a bit quiet, other than the smoke that was coming from the bonnet. I was a bit disoriented for a few seconds due to the impact and the sudden save of my seatbelt and the airbag. I couldn't hear Momo moving or making a sound, and I had no doubt that the car was going to catch fire soon. I got my seatbelt off and pushed the airbag so I could make a clear exit, I opened the door and fell out. I got up and opened at the back by then a few cars had stopped and the drivers came to see what was going on. I got Momo out and she was unconscious, she was also bleeding from her Nose. I put her down on the grass..

Driver1: Get away from the car Sir before it catches fire I think the petrol is leaking

Driver2: I have already called the Paramedics and the cops

Driver1: Do you have any valuables in the car? I nodded as I looked at Momo laying there

unconscious..

Driver1: I'll get your valuables for you but please take the kid and move away

I picked Momo up and the second driver led us to his car..

.

. YAYA

I am not a person that cries easily but I found myself sitting at the dressing table after bathing and just staring at myself in the mirror. Tears burned my eyes as I reflected on my life and everything that has happened to me. My family, Sandile, the abuse I suffered from him and my Mother. I was broken inside physically I look fine but internally I have died a lot of times..

I heard a knock at the door. Me: Come in

The door opened and Candice walked in holding a gold dress with gold & white heels..

Her: Babe come on I wiped my tears..

She sat on the bed and looked at my reflection in the mirror..

Her: Sandile?

I took a tissue and wiped my face..

Me: I just want peace Candice. I just want to finish school, get my degree and live a life where I'll be dependant on my salary than having to exchange my body for money

Candice: Yaya don't do this to yourself

Me: I have never been loved not even by my own Mother and definitely i am cursed when it comes to relationships i am suffering for putting Lihle through so much pain. I knew he was in a serious relationship with someone else, i knew they was set to get married soon i don't

know how i lost the ball and fell in love with him.

It was supposed to be about Money and nothing more.. Where did it all go wrong? Am I that bad to have all this happen to me? Now my own sister, my own sister is my Karma. I am hurt Candice, it cuts deep

She stood putting the outfit on the bed and came to me, she hugged me.

.

. LIHLE

Fikile: should I wait for you?(silence)

I felt a hand on my shoulder i jumped..Fikile: It's just me we have arrived

I looked around and we were parked next to the restaurant

Me: Tha.. Thank you

Her: Are you okay? You seem a bit shaken
Me: I am fine

Her: Lih..

Me: Fikile i am fine!! (shouting)I exhaled..

Me: Sorry I didn't mean to snap

In her mind she had a lot to ask but because of the mood that i was in, i think she didn't want to start a fight. I opened the door..

Me: You can go ill call
Her: Okay cool

I got out and watched her as she drove away, with my knees weak i went to the door..

Lady: Good evening welcome to Bonnitarestaurant table for one?

Me: actually i am meeting someone.. SandileKhumalo?

Her: let me check

She went to the board next to the door and checked..

Her: Table number 03 just go through that door you will see

Me: through that door?

Her: It's a private dining area Me: Ohw

I looked at her.. Me: Thank you

I passed a few tables making my way to the private dining area and there he was sitting at the table, i exhaled a few times and then made my way in. I walked up to the table and i looked around at least the glass was transparent so people can see what's happening. He lifted his eyes up and looked at me..

Him: Did you get lost?

Me: I am here now ain't I?He pointed at the chair..

Him: Please sit

I opened the chair and sat down.. Him: I got you a bottle of sweet red

He opened it and poured a little for me, he put itback in the bucket.

Him: I'll have whiskey on my side

I took the glass and gulped down the wine..Him: Slow down its going to be a long night

He raised his hand up for the waitress to comeand attend to us..

.

. YAYA

Candice: Wow you look beautiful

Me: Counts for nothing i am going to get

fucked Her: Yaya..

Me: Let's go

I led the way from the bedroom to the living room where Big Daddy was sitting with my potential client, they were smoking cigars and having whiskey..

Big D: And here she is although I thought it would be someone else
The guy turned and looked at me, he was younger than I had expected. He looked like he was in his early 30s. He stood up and buttoned the jacket of his suit, he put the cigar on the ashtray and made his way to me. He was.. I am even failing to find the words to describe him he took my hand and kissed it, while his beautiful gray eyes looked into mine..

Him: You look lovely

His voice was a bit deep..

He let go of my hand and put his on his chest i noticed he had on a Daniel Klein watch, he gave out a side smile..

Him: Where are my manners? My name is Sydney.. Sydney Duze
I just looked at him without saying anything on the other hand i was intoxicated by his cologne..

.

. LIHLE

I saw his lips moving but the words he was saying came to my ears gibberish, i was sweating and the light in the room appeared more brighter. I didn't feel good at all, cannot be the wine i only had 3 glasses no i am not drunk something is just not right. I looked at the glasses on the table and they appeared 3 times, our dishes we haven't even had the first course

yet.

Ndile: Hlehle are you okaaaaaaaaaaaaaay?His okay echoed in my ears..

Ndile: Should I take you home?Me: What's?? What's.. I..

I saw him standing up he came to me..Him: Lihle are you okay?

Me: Call King.. Call Fikile.. Call..

Him: No i am taking you to the hospitalHe picked me up i heard another voice..Voice: Is she okay?

Him: lead us to the other exit before everyone else starts noticing those looking just tell them she had a lot to drink

Voice: This way

Him: Thank you.. You have been of great helpVoice: She didn't notice the wine was already

opened?

Him: I think she was pretty nervous to take note of that

Voice: Okay Me: He.. Ta..

Ndile: Just sleep sweetheart

I was out of it, couldn't do anything my eyes started shutting slowly as if like i was drifting into a peaceful sleep..

.

To be continued

[09/29, 16:43] Ron: SEASON FINALE

¥74

KING

We were at the hospital and Momo woke up but she was still in a state of shock, she panicked so the Doctor sedated her. Last year she was involved in a terrible car accident that scarred

her so today when we had that accident, her body went into shock
Doctors said we are lucky that she survived. I still had to inform my
captain because we had an accident with the police van since i
borrowed Lihle my car, and speaking of Lihle she wasn't picking up
my calls which made me to stress more. I was in Momo's ward
when I received a call from Fikile, Momo passed out a few minutes
ago so I went to answer the call outside..

Me: Fikile Her: King

Me: Is everything alright? Her: I don't think so

Me: What do you mean?

Her: A few hours ago i drove Lihle to meet someone at Bonnita's
she said when the whole meeting is done she is going to call me so i
can come and fetch her, it's now 23:00 and she

hasn't called. I drove back to the restaurant but it's closed

Me: Who was she meeting?

Her: I don't know seriously but she seemed shaken

Me: How do you drive someone to go and meet another person without knowing who it is

Her: I know.. I know.. I know.. Just that she was in a very bad mood and I didn't want to start an argument

Me: Did you check at the house?

Her: Yes.. The lights are off there's no one
Me: Lihle has started with her shit

Her: I don't think so.. I think she's really in trouble this time around
I had another call coming through..

Me: Let me call you again

Her: Okay

The other call was my Sister, i answered..Me: Sylvia
Her: King! What's happening i have been tryingto get hold of
Momo but her phone is off
Me: Ya we..
Her: And your phone.. You wasn't picking upMe: Uhm..
Her: What?
Me: We had a minor accidentHer: A minor accident?
Me: Yes Momo is admitted her body went intoshock
I could hear how distress she was..Her: Can i talk to her? How is
she?
Me: She is sleeping they sedated herHer: Which hospital i am on
my wayMe: There's no need...

Her: Momo is my Daughter there's definitely a need!

.

. YAYA

Sydney had taken me to a very high class hotel in all my line of doing what i do, i have never had a man take me out to such a high class and costly hotel. The dishes we had the cheapest was R500 he asked me to order anything that i wanted, though i couldn't make out what dishes they served was my first time seeing them.. He is a smooth talker, has a beautiful smile with shallow dimples most of our talks revolved around my studies, my hopes and my dreams. He listened to me attentively he wasn't discouraging any part of my dreams that i told him i wanted to achieve, i wasn't used to this just sitting and talking with a man without sex being involved. He looked at the time..

Him: I think we should retire.. It's late

Me: So how do you wanna do this? Hotel, yourplace? How does it work with you?

He gave me a confused look.. Him: We are not going to have sex

Me: Huh?

Him: I had a long day at work and i just wanted some company over a delicious meal that's all

Me: This is bullshit

I threw my napkin on the table and stood up, i took my clutch bag and started walking away. I heard him call out to me but i ignore, he said asable to caught up with me just as I was about to exit..

Him: what's wrong i thought we were having a great time?

I looked at him..

Me: What kind of a man dines a woman at such

an expensive high class hotel and then wants nothing in return?

He chuckled..

Him: I see were the confusion is

Me: You brought me out here to just what play with me?

Him: Look Yaya i will still make the payment I looked at him startled..

Me: What is wrong with you?

Him: Now I don't know what to say Me: Please just drive me home

Him: Okay I'll drive you home

Someone must be playing a cruel joke on me i don't believe Sydney exists, he cannot exist..

.

. LIHLE

I felt cold water being poured on me i lifted myhead up in a panick only to find that the room was similar when I looked around, it was the same motel room were he held me captive thelast time. I was laying on the bed but i wasn't tied up this time around.

He stood there looking at me while my heartraced..

Him: You know while you had passed out i wasthinking of what i was going to do to you

He looked around..

Him: Hold you captive and torture you until i gettired, i don't know i had a lot of ideas of what i can do to you

I moved back while I was still on the bed..

Him: One idea struck me that why not just end this now? Why not make it a less painful death?I mean we cannot keep on doing this it's tiring

Me: if you don't let me go King will find you and

kill you

Him: Really? Where is he again?Me: Just let me go Please

Him: I will let you go in a way that you will meet your Mother.. So how are we going to do this?

Should i..

His phone rang, he took it out and looked at it for a while. I looked at the door it was slightly opened and while he was concentrated on his phone maybe i can make a clean get away? It's now or never. It's a risk I'll have to take..

As he was busy on his phone i jumped out of bed and ran to the door, i didn't think my heels would take me there but they did.

Unfortunately when i opened i noticed that the chain was still holding the door tight, when i tried to get the chain off he was already grabbing me by my braids he threw me down while locking the door.

Him: You were never smart that's the sad part

He took out his gun from his waist and came straight to me..

Me: Sandile please if you ever loved me you would let me go

Him: I did love you.. That's why i am doing this

He came and grabbed my braids tightly then started hitting me with the back of his gun right across my face, on my forehead, and on my head. It was an excruciating pain, one that i have never felt before. He bashed me up until I started bleeding, my whole face was bloody and my vision was starting to get a bit blurry. When he thought that i had enough he threw me on the floor again, I was crying and begging for my life but that was landing on deaf ears. I wiped my bloody face with my hand to at least get a better vision and I saw him wiping the gun with his shirt while his back was facing me.. He had nothing on in his upper body and he was busy going on and on not realizing that i was still

conscious..

Him: Now for the final straw i just need to put afew bullets in you.. Think of it Lihle i am doing you a favour and what's sad is that i am going to get away with your murder like i did with yourMother's murder and Nkabinde's murder!

I looked around and under the bed I saw a candle holder, i crawled to get it while I could still taste my own blood. After getting a hold of it, it was a bit heavy i took off my heels and triedto get up.

Him: Nothing can touch me.. See in this world iam a god!

He put the gun temporarily on the small chair asi approached him with that bit of strength that i had in me, when he turned around he was met by the candle holder across his face. I kept on hitting him repeatedly not giving him a chance to defend himself, the first blow sent him screaming and the other blows sent him to the

floor.. I threw the candle holder and then gothold of his gun..

Me: You are not a God, God is immortal and this is the death of you

He looked at me with blood on his face he was in a lot of pain i think i busted his nose..

Me: You cannot do it Lihle.. You cannot do it!! You are not a murderer!

My hands were shaking he is right i am not a murderer..

Him: Slowly put down the gun please and let's talk

I was about to surrender until my hands started glowing it was a bright light that filled the room, as my hands were holding the gun i felt the warmth of other hands helping me hold the gun..

I slowly turned around and i couldn't believe it, it was my Mother..

Me: Mom..

Mom: You were forever stubborn

She looked the same but the only difference is that she was glowing very bright..

As warmth clouded my heart, and tears escaped my eyes i felt her hands pressing on tightly and the gun went off. I heard Sandile screaming a little, i turned to look at him and the bullet had gone straight into his chest when he was trying to approach me in hopes of snatching the gun from me. I panicked my hands started shaking, he looked at the blood oozing from that area and with his last strength he continued approaching me i closed my eyes and kept on shooting until the gun had no bullets anymore. It was very quiet and when I opened my eyes Sandile was laying on the floor in his own pool of blood, i turned around and MyMother wasn't around anymore. I turned and looked at Sandile, his eyes and his mouth were slightly open. I had no doubt in my mind that he was gone, i dropped the gun and slowly went to

get my bag so I can get my phone.

.

. YAYA

Candice: Yaya wake up!! Wake up!!

I woke up screaming, i was sweating, my heart was racing. I was overwhelmed with this great fear that i cannot explain, i was breathing abnormally..

Candice: It's just a nightmare.. It's just a nightmare

She hugged me as I tried to recall what my nightmare was about, but all I know is that something was not right..

.

To be continued

[09/29, 16:44] Ron: SEASON FINALE

-

PRESENT DAYLIHLE

Me: The platform is now open for questions I saw a lot of hands up..

Me: Wow so many hands, i guess everyone wants a piece of me today

The whole auditorium laughed.

Me: Can we have that lady wearing a red tshirt please, pass her the mic

She stood up as they passed her the mic..

Her: First of all i want to congratulate you on your book when i read from the introduction all the way to the end i had moments were i would put it down frequently because it was that intense but i ended up finishing it within two days

I drank water as her question was about to come..

Her: Your book ended where you shot him after that we were never let in on what happened next

Me: At first the judge who reviewed the case charged me with manslaughter i was sentenced to 15 years in prison then after serving at least 6 months another judge reviewed my case with the evidence that the Dr provided of my bruises the judge actually let me get away with self defense it was ruled that i was put under circumstances where he would've taken my life and therefore what i did i actually protected myself

Her: Did King have anything to do with your case being reviewed again?

Me: Yes only because he wanted justice to be served i was innocent all i did was to defend myself from a man who wanted to prematurely take my life

Her: You sound so proud of what you did as if

like Sandile's life didn't matter.. If i am correct you grew up in a Christian home and at the end your Mother who was supposedly a proclaimed Christian helped you pull the trigger? Aren't you scared that you going to hell?

She put me in a position that really angered me, what about all the innocent people Sandile killed and tortured? Me included. I closed my eyes and took a deep breath..

Me: Can i have the next question please

Her: You going to burn in hell Lihle Cele! You area murderer! Your whole book is a shame! You played a man that truly loved you Security escorted her out as she was busy ranting like a mad person..

Me: Okay that was unexpected.. Can we have the next question please

A mic was passed to another lady, she stood up..

Her: Relax i am not going to be throwing judgments

Me: Pheew thank you

Her: i just wanna know what happened to your Aunt and your cousin, did you also get your Money?

Me: Yes i ended up getting my money used some for my book and the rest i have put it away safely until i know what to do with it

Her: Any plans of going back to school? Me: Maybe

I looked at the time..

Me: I am open for one last question

Some guy stood up and they handed him themic..

Him: I read your book and i must say you are a very strong woman

Me: Thank you

Him: I just wanna know how are things now between you and King?

Me: We are fine things have never been peaceful in my relationship before

Him: was he ever allowed to have a relationship with his Son?

Me: Unfortunately no

Him: What about his Sister and his niece? Did the niece ever recover from the accident?

Me: Yes she did and we have a very strong bond all of us

Him: Your alcohol addiction?

Me: I haven't drank alcohol in 8 months now and I am attending therapy to help me deal with what happened

Him: one last question Me: Okay

Him: What happened to Yaya?

I paused for a while..

Me: I am sorry everyone i have to besomewhere

They all grumbled..

Him: wait what happened to Yaya?

The MC came through and shook my hand theni walked off the stage..

MC: Everyone that was Lihle Cele the author behind the book titled "Broken" she has sold 20000 copies so far and still selling i must say thisbook changed a lot of lives...

.

. YAYA

Candice: How is it now?(Silence)

Her: Yaya?

I looked at her standing behind me i looked ather reflection through the mirror..

Me: It's fine

Her: In less than a few minutes you walking down that aisle and all you can say is "it's fine"

Me: Sorry im just..

Her: I thought today we wasn't going to thinkabout Thandeka

Me: How can I not think of her? me and her lostcontact that day i found out she was sleeping with my man and no one has heard from her or seen her. She left two kids they haven't seen herin years!

Her: I am sorry sweetie but Sydney will be waiting for you so right now take Thandeka offyour mind because you need to walk down thataisle

Me: You right.. You know he is the best thingthat has ever happened to me

Her: You guys are the reason why i have faith that one day.. Maybe one day Big Daddy might propose
I laughed..

Me: Is my Mother and my Grandmother here?Her: Yes they are

Me: Can't believe Mom cleaned up her actHer: She seems to be doing well

Me: and working.. At least she's taking care of Thandeka's kids and Grandmother she has also stopped drinking

Her: If you weren't a social worker you wouldn't have been able to help her be who she is today, you doing a great job Yaya.. Not long ago you graduated now you getting married

I smiled..

Me: God has blessed me you know what's happening now overpowers the pain i was put

through all these years i am comfortable to say that I am happy for the first time in my life

We heard a knock at the door..Candice: I'll get it

She went to open.. Candice: Please come in

My Mother walked in she was wearing a beautiful dress with a matching hat..

Candice: I'll give you guys some spaceShe walked out, i stood up..

Mom: Look at you.. You look beautifulMe: Thank you

She looked like she had something to say but didn't know how to say it.

Mom: Yaya i am very sorry about everything.. I..

Me: Don't Ma.. Not today please.. Today it's a very special day for me let's try to be happy and

leave things of the past alone i long forgave youand i am very proud that you changed

She smiled through her tears..

Mom: You right.. Today it's all about you andthank you for everything

We heard another knock at the door..

Mom: It must be your friend she's probablyback.. I will go and take my seat

I smiled at her..

She approached the door and walked out whileLihle walked in..

Lihle: I thought i missed the whole thingI chuckled..

She came and hugged me...Her: How are you feeling?

Me: Nervous but I am feeling a whole lot betternow that you here

Her: You look stunning

Me: i do and you look stunning too Miss bestselling Author

She laughed...

Me: When are you getting married? Her: Definitely not in a rush

It's amazing how Lihle and i became close when she was writing her book she asked for my story and spending more time together brought us closer because we shared the same pain, we both suffered in the hands of the same person..

Her: You look down though, shouldn't you be happy?

I sighed..

Me: It's just my Sister she is worrying me she has been missing for a very long time

She looked around..

Her: Where is the veil?

Me: Is King making any progress with the case?She gave me a faint smile..

Me: What is it?

She walked up to me and held my hands..Her: I am sorry Yaya

Me: Sorry? Why are you sorry?

Her: Your Sister she.. Her body was found insome bushes a week ago

Me: What?

Her: I didn't wanna tell you because I didn't wanna upset you.. I made king promise that youmust find out after the wedding

I suddenly felt sick.. Her: Yaya calm downI shook my head no..

Me: I can't do this..

Her: No you can do this.. And you will.. We are all here for you, i know it's tough i know you hurtbut someone who truly loves you is waiting for you don't disappoint him

I looked at her.. Her: Come let's go

She helped me put the veil. For some odd reason i asked Lihle to walk me down the aisle, i know it sounds bizarre but i wanted us to walk down the aisle together. I want her to hand me to my soon to be husband, after everything i did to her the pain i put her through i want her to give my marriage a blessing.

Her: Are you ready?

I put my hand around her arm..Me: I am ready

We both walked out of the room to the garden were the ceremony was going to be conducted.Everyone stood up when we was about to walk

down that aisle, she looked at me first with tears in her eyes and i looked at her too with tears in my eyes. After a few seconds we laughed as tears fell..

Her: Let's go

Me: New lives, with new people who truly love us

I looked up..

Me: Wherever you are Sandile you are blessing in disguise

Her: Without you i wouldn't have met King

Me: And i wouldn't have met Sydney who paid for the remaining years of me completing my Degree, he didn't put me through constant pain just because he was financially helping me but everyday he showered me with love he is the best thing that has ever happened to me

Her: And King he is one in a million

Everyone was staring at us wondering why we

not walking down the aisle..Me: Are you ready?

Her: I am

We started walking down the aisle and at our request no song was played we wanted to walk down the aisle singing our own song that we relate too..

We started walking while singing:

"I've lost the use of my heart but I'm still alive, Still looking for the light

And the endless pool on the other side.. It's the wild wild west

I'm doing my best..

I'm at the borderline of my faith

I'm at the hinterland of my devotion

I'm in the front line of this battle of mine, but i'm still alive.. I'm a soldier of love every day and night

I'm a soldier of love All the days of my life
I've been torn up inside I've been left behind Tall I ride
I have the will to survive"

*****THE END*****